00086839

ADVERTISEMENT.

An accidental meeting with the 13th regiment at the sea-bathing quarter of Walmer during the autumn of last year gave me an opportunity of hearing more of the particulars of the Jellalabad siege than had previously been communicated to me. The narrative was full of interest when detailed by actors in the scenes which they described; and this it was which led to the determination on my part to place it permanently upon record: for brilliant as have been the exploits of many corps and brigades, as well in the Afghan as in other wars, none seems to me to have exhibited more soldier-like qualities than that which, under the late gallant and lamented Sale, fought its way from Cabul to Jellalabad, and held the latter place against a nation. The 13th Queen's and 35th Bengal Native Infantry, with the detachments of artillery, sappers, and cavalry, which co-operated with them, have won a name for bravery, endurance, and steady discipline which any regiments in any service may envy. Let me add the expression of an earnest hope, that being thus conspicuous they will take care in other and not less important respects to set an example, wherever they go, to their comrades, as well European as Asiatic.

The substance of the following story is gathered chiefly from the manuscript journals of officers engaged in the campaign.

I have consulted, likewise, the Orderly Books of the 13th, which verify every statement advanced; and the conversation of various individuals, particularly of Captain Wood, Brigade-Major at Chatham, has been of infinite use to me. One ground of deep regret there is, indeed, for me, as well as for the country at large, namely, that the noble old soldier who taught his followers thus to fight and thus to conquer, no longer survives either to approve or censure my narrative. But Sir Robert Sale died, as he himself always wished to do, on the field of battle; and his fame survives him.

G. R. G.

Chelsea, June, 1846.

Digitized with financial assistance from the Government of Maharashtra on 26 March, 2016

CONTENTS.

CHAPTER I.

PAGE

Afghanistan—Its Geographical Position—Climate, and Productions. 1

CHAPTER II.

Outline of Afghan History 13

CHAPTER III.

Early Negotiations with Afghanistan—Preparations for its Invasion 22

CHAPTER IV.

Passage of the Indus—March upon Candahar 32

CHAPTER V.

March upon Ghuznee—Capture of the Place—March on Cabul . 39

CHAPTER VI.

Breaking-up of the Army of the Indus—The unquiet State of Afghanistan—Surrender of Dost Mohammed 45

CHAPTER VII.

Peaceful Occupation of Cabul and the Posts adjacent . . . 61

CHAPTER VIII.

PAGE
Peaceful Occupations at Cabul 68

CHAPTER IX.

March of Sale's Brigade towards the Provinces—Operations at Bootkak 75

CHAPTER X.

Night attacks on the 35th—Advance of the 13th to rejoin their Comrades 82

CHAPTER XI.

March to Tizeen—Affair in the Valley 88

CHAPTER XII.

March from Tizeen—Rear-guard engaged 95

CHAPTER XIII.

March to Gundamuck—Smart Affair with the Rear-guard . . 103

CHAPTER XIV.

Bad tidings from Cabul—March—Arrival in Camp of unlooked-for Visitors—Sharp Action—Approach Jellalabad 110

CHAPTER XV.

Jellalabad—Conflagrations at Night—Sortie in the Morning . . 117

CHAPTER XVI.

Continuance of the Blockade 125

CHAPTER XVII.

PAGE
Bad News—Arrival of Dr. Brydon—His Narrative 132

CHAPTER XVIII.

Continued Preparations for Defence—Construction of Corn-Mills—Earthquake 140

CHAPTER XIX.

Siege continued—Sortie 149

CHAPTER XX

Battle of the 7th of April—Fall of Colonel Dennie 156

CHAPTER XXI.

Arrival of Pollock's army—Sickness in Camp 163

CHAPTER XXII.

Advance of Pollock's Army to Cabul 172

CHAPTER XXIII.

Evacuation of Afghanistan 179

SALE'S BRIGADE

IN

AFGHANISTAN.

CHAPTER I.

Afghanistan—Its Geographical Position, Climate, and Productions.

It is impossible to fix, with any degree of accuracy, the present limits of the kingdom of Cabul. When visited by Mr. Elphinstone in 1809, it was said to extend from the west of Heraut in longitude 62°, to the eastern portion of Cashmere in longitude 77° E.; and from the mouth of the Indus in latitude 24° to the Oxus in latitude 37° N. It comprehended, according to the nomenclature of our best works, the districts of Afghanistan and Segistan, with part of Khorassan and of Makran; Balk with Tokerstan and Kelan; Cuttore, Cabul, Sindey, and Cashmere, together with a portion of Lahore and the greater part of Moultan. But besides that, even in 1809, the obedience paid to the king by many of these provinces was rather nominal than real, the subsequent progress of events has materially crippled his power, and contracted his dominions. When we speak, therefore, of the Dooraunee empire as being bounded on the north by the Hindoo Cush, or Indian Caucasus, on the east by Hindostan, by the Arabian sea on the south, and by Persia on the west, we must be understood as assigning to it rather the limits by which in theory it is circumscribed, than the extent of territory throughout the whole of which the authority of the nominal government is recognised.

The population of the country thus marked out has been taken

at numbers varying from fifteen to nine millions. Probably the latter will be found to come, under existing circumstances, as near to the truth as the former. It is composed of many different races, of which the principal are Afghans, Belochees, Tartars of all descriptions, Persians, including Tanjiks, Indians, such as Cashmerians, Juts, &c.; besides miscellaneous tribes, which are neither numerically considerable, nor exercise any great moral or political influence in society.

The face of the country is very much diversified, being intersected in all directions by mountain ranges, which increase in altitude as you descend from the shores of the Arabian sea and the great plain of the Indus, till you reach the foot of that branch of the Himalayahs, to which the name of the Hindoo Cush has been given. The principal of these are the Khyberry hills, which follow the course of the Indus on both sides as far down as Korrabaugh, or Callabaugh, in latitude 38° S.; the Suliman mountains, which lie mainly to the west of this river, and push out numerous spurs, till they connect themselves with the mountains of Kund; the table-land, or rugged highlands of Kelaut; the Khojak mountains; the Gaudava mountains; the Bolan; the hills about Ghuznee; and, finally, the steep ridges which overhang the elevated plain of Cabul on every side, and gradually lose themselves towards the north and east in the great Indian Caucasus.

A country thus ribbed, and of which the elevation is everywhere considerable, cannot but be, upon the whole, barren and unproductive. A large proportion of its surface is mere rock; and the pasturage in the mountainous districts, though excellent here and there, is generally scanty. Nevertheless, the valleys which pass to and fro among the hills are remarkable for the fertility of their soil, producing in abundance almost all the herbs and fruits which thrive both in Asia and in Europe: for the climate of Afghanistan (it may be best to use this term as generic of the whole) differs greatly for the better from that of Hindostan; the heat in summer being generally less intense, and the cold in winter more severe. Indeed, the snow, which never melts upon the summits of many hills besides the Hindoo Cush, comes down in smart showers upon the plains in the season, and the ice on stagnant waters is often of such a consistency as to sustain both men and horses, as in the north of Europe.

The waters of Afghanistan are the Indus—with its innumerable tributaries,—the rivers of Cabul, Kauskur and Helmund, the Urghundaub, the Khashrooa, the Ochus, a lake near Cabul, and canals and watercourses innumerable, which have been cut among the hills in different districts for purposes of irrigation. Its animal productions are as varied as the varieties perceptible in its soil. In addition to the wild beasts which thrive among ourselves, there are to be found here lions, tigers, panthers, hyænas, wolves, and bears. Both the lions and the tigers appear to be inferior in point of size and ferocity to those of Africa, and the plains of the Ganges; but they do considerable damage at times to the flocks and herds, and are occasionally, though not often, destructive to human life. One breed of horses—that reared in the district of Heraut—is excellent; the rest are for the most part yaboos or ponies, but they are exceedingly hardy and sure of foot, and, as well as camels and asses, are numerous. There is no lack of cattle, and sheep and goats are abundant. We find here, also, dogs, some of which, especially the greyhounds, would be highly prized in Leicestershire; hawks, trained and untrained; for falconry is a favourite sport with the Afghan chiefs; and, as to domestic poultry, every species which you meet in England is to be met with here. Insects and reptiles likewise abound; but of the latter few are dangerous, for all of the serpent kind appear to be harmless; and the bite of the centipede and scorpion, though it may trouble for a while, has never been known to prove fatal. Finally, the herbage, wherever it finds soil on which to grow, is to the eye of a European peculiarly attractive, while most of the trees, shrubs, flowers, fruits, grain, and grasses which come to perfection in the temperate regions thrive here, with many which require the suns of a tropical climate to mature and bring them to perfection.

The state of society in Afghanistan is now, and seems from time immemorial to have been, entirely different from that which prevails in other countries of Asia. In name the government is monarchical; but the authority of the monarch, except in the great towns and throughout the districts immediately dependent upon them, extends no farther over his subjects than the authority of the first Jameses extended in Scotland over the

clans which occupied the most inaccessible of the highland districts. Indeed, the Afghans bear, in this respect, a striking resemblance to the Celtic portions of the population both of Scotland and of Ireland, that they are divided into tribes, clans, and septs, which pay little or no obedience, in the internal management of their affairs, to any power except that of custom and of their chiefs. To be sure, there is a point in which the spirit of clanship in Afghanistan acts differently, and on principle too, from its manner of operation either in Scotland or in Ireland. In the latter countries the head of the tribe used to demand and obtain the fealty of his clansmen to his person; in the former this fealty is paid more to the community than to the chief: and hence it comes to pass that there is much more of individual independence of character among the Afghans than seems to have prevailed among the ancestors of the MacNeils or the O'Connors; for though there are instances in the history of the Celtic clans of the setting aside by his people of one chief and the appointment on the same authority of another, the proceeding was not only rare in itself, but seems never to have been resorted to except in the last emergency; whereas in Afghanistan the practice is of constant occurrence as often as by the representatives of the principal families the chief is held to be incompetent; or is found guilty of having transgressed those unwritten laws which are understood by all, and by all reverenced and obeyed from one generation to another.

The principal tribes among the Afghans are four, which branch off respectively into a countless number of clans. These are the Doorannees, the Ghilzies or Ghiljies, the Khyberrees, and the Belooches, of which the Doorannees have, for the last hundred years, possessed a preponderating political influence, though the Ghilzies are perhaps numerically the stronger, and, as individuals, assert the utmost conceivable share of personal independence. The latter, indeed, are noted, even among the wild tribes of the Caucasus, for their ferocity. Portions of them, which inhabit the regions between Cabul and Jellalabad, have doubtless been reduced, by the weight of the crown, to a certain show of order; but the clans which dwell in the districts that extend from Candahar to Ghuznee are described as removed by a very slight bar from savageism. Two of these, the Oktaks and the Toh-

kees, are said by one who sojourned a good while among them, to be, as regards their male population, "unsurpassed by any other Afghan tribe for commanding stature and strength;" but it cannot be added that they use these advantages well, for "their manners are brutal," and the violence of their chiefs, in their intercourse with strangers, is often such "that they can scarcely be considered in the light of human beings." Neither can much be stated in praise of their gentleness, whatever other good quality may be possessed by the Khyberree *septs*. They rob all merchants, travellers, and strangers whom they can waylay, and practise perpetual forays on the lands of their neighbours; but they never murder in cold blood. An individual may be slain in the attempt to defend his property; a whole kaffela or caravan may be cut to pieces; but such an event as a deliberate assassination, except for the furtherance of a political end, seems to be unknown among them. Like their Celtic prototypes they are, moreover, hospitable in the extreme, and as ready to give a cloak to one wayfaring man who may need it, as to take a cloak away from another whom they may attack. If you throw yourself upon them in their own homes, you may almost always assure yourself of protection; but it does not by any means follow that, having escorted you to the extreme limits of their territory, and seen you fairly across the line, they shall not fall upon you the next minute and plunder you of every article of value that you possess.

Except in such clans as these, which may be reckoned among the Caucasian Children of the Mist, the Afghans appear to be a sociable and even a romantic people. The intercourse between the sexes is, with them, on a far better footing than with other tribes which profess the faith of Moslem. Indeed, the Afghan's home deserves to be accounted such, for he shares his hours of leisure pleasantly with his wife and children; and if a guest (not a European) arrive at his dwelling, he leads him, without scruple, into the circle. The consequence is, that the passion of love, as we understand the term, is neither unknown nor unhonoured in Afghanistan. It enters into the subject of almost all the songs and tales which pass current in the country, and exercises no trivial influence at times over the transactions of real life. A love passage between the chieftain of one clan and the wife of

the chief of another, led to a long and fierce war between the houses, in the course of which, as both clans had numerous allies, much blood was shed. It is a remarkable fact also, that some of the most illustrious warriors and princes of this nation have been as much celebrated for their skill in poetry as in arms. Khutal Khan, the chief of the tribe of the Khuttucks, whose resistance to Arungzebe might stand a comparison with that of Sir William Wallace to Edward the First, was the most popular poet of his day, and struck his lyre with excellent effect as often as it was found necessary to reanimate the spirits of his countrymen when depressed by defeat. His songs and odes continue to be in great favour throughout Afghanistan to this day.

Few of the Oriental nations have any high regard for truth, or consider that they are bound by promises, however solemnly uttered. The Afghans can hardly be said to form an exception to this rule; yet the best authorities represent them as at least knowing what truth is; and adhering to it, except when the advancement of some scheme of paramount importance in their own eyes seems to require its violation. In other respects also they differ widely from their neighbours on either hand of them. There is no indolence or effeminacy in their natural dispositions: on the contrary, they are hardy, enduring, patient of fatigue, and, when occupied in any business or employment that interests them, industrious to a remarkable extent. As horsemen they equal the Tartars, or the Indian dwellers upon the Pampas of South America. Slavery prevails among them, but in a very modified and irrepulsive form. To a man they are fond of money: nevertheless they do not hesitate to scatter it freely round them, provided they have reason to expect that, by so doing, they will secure the accomplishment of some important or much-desired end. They are proud, and jealous of neglect by their superiors. A clansman will attend cheerfully in the hall of his chief, as the chief waits upon the sovereign, from day to day; and so long as the superior continues to treat the inferior with courtesy, it is well. But let this be interrupted, even so far as that the salutation of the latter is not returned, and, without making a display of his mortification, the inferior forthwith absents himself. In a word, the Afghans, like other portions of the great human family, have

their virtues as well as their vices, both modified, if not produced, by the point in civilization to which they have attained. Their vices are revenge, cruelty, avarice, rapacity, jealousy, and a paltering on great occasions with good faith. Their virtues, love of liberty, fidelity to friends, kindness to dependants, hospitality, bravery, hardihood, frugality, patience of labour, and prudence.

The mass of the people who inhabit the towns do not belong to either of the four great Afghan tribes. They are the descendants of the various races which have at different times broken in upon Afghanistan and established there a temporary supremacy, and who are now, and for some generations past have been, reduced to a state of vassalage. Indeed, it is in Afghanistan somewhat as it used to be in England ere the Norman and Saxon races amalgamated, that the feebler, though more numerous portion of the community, carry on its ordinary business and practise trades, while they who exercise dominion over the land dwell apart chiefly in their country-houses. The court is indeed Afghan; so is the army; and the Afghan courtiers and commanders of troops occupy mansions in the capital as long as attendance on the sovereign is required. But the shopkeepers and tradesmen in Cabul are almost all Taujeeks, while banking is conducted exclusively by Hindoos. It is not, however, meant that among merchants on a large scale Afghans are never to be found. Commerce they do not consider as degrading: it is trade alone which they despise; though, generally speaking, the chiefs seek employment about the court, from which they withdraw at stated seasons to their castles, that they may superintend the gathering in of their harvests and indulge in the pleasures of the chase, to which they are much addicted.

Of the Afghan tribes some are agricultural, others pastoral. The agricultural clans possess settled habitations; the pastoral hordes dwell in tents; which they remove from place to place as the desire of obtaining better forage for their flocks and herds may prompt. Five distinct orders of persons find employment and a subsistance in agriculture. These are, first, such owners of the soil as cultivate their own lands, employing for that purpose hired labourers; next, tenants who occupy farms at a fixed rent, either in money or in kind; thirdly, middle-men, or land-

stewards, who, applying a stipulated portion of the produce to their own use, manage the whole estate for the owner. Fourthly, there are hired labourers—freemen—who, for nine months in the year, engage to serve either a tenant or a land-owner, and are remunerated, sometimes by a mixed payment of money, food, and clothing; sometimes by money-wages alone. If the latter arrangement be effected, the labourer receives for his term of service about thirty rupees: if the former, his receipts fluctuate between two maunds and a half of grain with one rupee, and ten maunds with two rupees. Lastly, there are serfs (*adscripti glæbæ*) which go with the land, however frequently it may change its owners.

Labourers are hired in the towns by the day, and receive for their day's work from fourpence half-penny to sevenpence of our money,—enormous wages in a country where from five to ten pounds of the best wheaten flour are sold for twopence; for wheaten bread constitutes in Afghanistan the ordinary food of the people, though rice, and occasionally Indian corn, is consumed; while the horses are fed with barley, the cattle during the winter with turnips, and both cattle and horses, when the occasion requires, with carrots.

From what root the Afghans are sprung it is not an easy matter to determine. The Taujeeks, of whom mention has just been made, are of a mixed Arab and Persian descent, being the children of the hordes which first introduced Mohammedanism into the country, and, driving the aborigines to the hills, kept almost exclusive possession of the plains during three centuries: but the origin of each of the four great tribes is lost in obscurity. They themselves have a tradition that they are the descendants of the ten tribes whom Shalmanezer carried away captive after the destruction of Samaria; and the account which they give of that catastrophe is both curious and striking. Indeed, they go further than this; for they claim kindred with a royal stock, asserting that they are sprung from Ismia or Reskia, one of the sons of Saul. Unfortunately, however, for this tradition, the name of Reskia or Ismia, as a son of Saul, does not occur in the Bible; and in other respects their genealogies savour very much of the fabulous. Besides, their language bears no very close affinity either to the Hebrew or the ancient Chaldee.

Out of two hundred and eight words, which Mr. Elphinstone took the trouble to compare with Persian, Zend, Pehlevee, Sanscrit, Hindostanee, Arabic, Armenian, Georgian, Hebrew, and Chaldee, one hundred and ten were found to be radically different from all. The rest could be traced back to one or other of the six former dialects; whereas with the four latter they proved to have no connexion. The Afghan seems therefore to be an original language, in the strictest sense of the term; and is stated by those who are acquainted with it to be rough, but expressive and manly. The people themselves call it Pushtoo, though the character of which they make use is the Persian. A curious theory is entertained respecting this matter by one whose judgment it is right to treat with respect. Mr. Masson considers the Pushtoo to be a version of the Pali, that ancient language of which traces are to be found well nigh all over the world; which was spoken by the Phœnicians, the people of Carthage, of Tyre, and even of Italy; and which the Hyksos, or shepherd-kings, brought with them from the East into Egypt; and continued as the Philistines to make use of down to the days of the descendants of David, and long afterwards.

The best authorities agree in describing the Afghans, especially in their towns, as a sociable and lively people. They delight in evening parties, where their principal amusement is story-telling. They have their concerts likewise, and nautches, of which the latter are said to be in a great measure free from the indelicate movements which characterise those of Hindostan. They are great people for pleasure parties into the country, and play marbles up to grey hairs with extreme relish. Their more athletic sports are firing at marks, hawking, riding down partridges, and battue-shooting; and they are much excited by witnessing the combats of quails, cocks, dogs, rams, and even camels.

There are other peculiarities in the domestic manners of the Afghans which deserve to be especially noticed. To the nature of the chiefship in each of the principal tribes allusion has already been made; as, for example, that the office is hereditary, and that the power, though controlled by recognised and established usages, is very considerable. This hereditary right, however, implies no more than that the chief, or Khan, for the

time being, shall derive his descent from one of the leading families of the sept; for it is the king who confers the dignity; and though an abandonment of this principle is sure to give offence, and sometimes leads to civil war, there are many instances on record of a stranger being placed over the whole community, though seldom to a good purpose. At the same time the chief, after he is nominated and has been accepted by the tribe, can in himself perform no act of sovereignty, but must consult with his Jeerga; that is, a council of elders, consisting of the heads of the principal families in the tribe. To be sure, if a sudden emergency occur, or some matter of trivial moment demand a settlement, the khan or chief is permitted to act alone; but an attempt to render himself independent of the Jeerga, where time and opportunity of calling it together might be afforded, would inevitably lead to mischief, and end either in the deposition of the khan, or the severance from the tribe of such septs as might feel that they were strong enough to set up for themselves.

Feuds and quarrels of long standing appear to exist among the tribes of Central Asia to as great an extent as they formerly prevailed in the Highlands of Scotland. To this, indeed, the universal recognition of the *lex talionis* leads; for where individuals assert the right to avenge their own wrongs, and vindicate their own honour, there can be no escape from the ascendancy of the fiercer passions, which are never assuaged in a day. Moreover, he who touches the honour or attacks the rights of any one member of a clan, touches the honour or attacks the rights of all; and a family war once begun, continues to be waged often throughout three or more generations. Then follow forays and wasting of lands with fire and sword, which there is no power in the supreme government to suppress; for, in point of fact, the supreme government is never appealed to except in the last extremity.

The law of Afghanistan is, in theory, the same with that of Mohammedan countries in general—that of the Khoran. In practice the people manage their affairs and adjust the differences according to Pushtoonwullie, or immemorial usage. This it is which adjudges an eye to be given for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth; and enables the party wronged to avenge himself on a

relative, if circumstances prevent him from reaching the aggressor in person. Hence revenge becomes, among the Afghans, a point of honour which no man may waive except with disgrace, though he may nurse and hide the sentiment for many years, till a fit opportunity of making a display of it occur. At the same time it is fair to add, that if quarrels arise within a clan, the clan uses every endeavour to adjust them without bloodshed. Sometimes the chief is privileged to interfere, though only as a mediator or adviser. Sometimes the council of elders takes the matter up, and compels a reconciliation, on pain of expulsion: or, lastly, the khan, or head of the tribe, may be appealed to; when he not only forces the offending party to make restitution, but levies upon him a fine for the benefit of the state.

In all these respects, the parallel between the state of society in Central Asia, and among the Celtic nations of Europe five centuries ago, is very striking. There are other points in which the Afghans appear to resemble the Germans, as Tacitus has described them. An Afghan tribe never refuses the rights of hospitality to a suppliant. He who flies from his clan, even if stained with blood, is sheltered or protected by the sept, on whose mercy he throws himself, war itself being preferred to the disgrace of rendering up a client. Again, when any great public event is at issue—if the honour or interests of the nation seem to be in danger—if foreign war be meditated, or the means of defence against invasion from abroad demand attention, the khans, or heads of tribes, assemble, and deliberate in public council on the measures which it may be most expedient to pursue. Having determined upon these, they assign to the shah, or king, authority to carry them into execution; and obey, or are expected to obey, his bequests implicitly as long as the danger lasts. But the occasion ended, things return to their former course, for the monarchy has little or nothing of the temper of an autocracy about it. Indeed that kingdom is a mere amalgamation of many independent republics; the king, the mere head of this confederation,—whose influence is felt in the capital and in other great towns where he may chance to have governors, but who exercises little or no authority over the dwellers in the glens and among mountains. The service which

his chiefs render to him is merely feudal. He may arrange for tribute instead of soldiers, and impose taxes on the traders and merchants who dwell around the palace; but this tribute he seldom gets in, except with the strong hand, and neither in the amount nor manner of collecting his taxes does he seem to be guided by any fixed rule.

Finally, a king of Cabul is not only such, but he is khan or chief of the most warlike and powerful of the Afghan tribes. And in this particular also, his position bears a remarkable resemblance to that of the kings of Scotland, while as yet the royal house of Stuart occupied the throne in the northern division of Great Britain.

CHAPTER II.

Outline of Afghan History.

THERE was a time, some centuries ago, when the Doorannee empire, in respect to its power and extent, held a high place among the nations of the earth. The Afghans have repeatedly given sovereigns both to Persia and to Hindostan; and with both countries their wars, aggressive and defensive, have been endless. It was among them, also, as numerous coins and other relics attest, that the Macedonian colonies of Alexandria ad Caucasum, of Arigæum, and Bazera were established; indeed, there is a tribe inhabiting the mountain districts north of Lughman and Khonar, whose complexion, hair, features, and general appearance seem to vouch for the descent which they claim from the wreck of Alexander's army. But Afghanistan could not, any more than the countries that border upon it, sustain the attacks of the enthusiastic propagators of the faith of Mohammed, and yielded, for a while, reluctant obedience to the rule of the Caliphs. Other revolutions followed. As their conquerors sank into effeminacy and indolence the mountaineers recovered their courage, and, headed by kings of the Ghilzie tribe, not only threw off the Persian yoke, but became lords of Persia itself. Then arose Nadir Shah, before whose strong right hand all opposition went down. The Persian crown was wrested from its Afghan wearer; the Persian arms were once more dominant in Afghanistan; and Delhi itself felt the weight of a sceptre which was wielded to crush rather than to protect. Nevertheless, among these hardy mountaineers the spirit of independence was not extinguished. They found a new leader in Ahmed Khan, a principal man in the Suddozye family, one of the most powerful of the clans into which the tribe of Abdallees, otherwise Doorannees, was divided; and by him they were conducted through a series of great exploits and marvellous successes, not only to independence, but to a wide extension of their empire.

Ahmed Shah was a prudent politician as well as a great and

successful warrior. He innovated in no alarming degree upon the usages of his country; yet attached to himself and to his government the nobles and heads of houses, by finding for them constant employment and much gain in military operations. His object was rather to extend than to consolidate the empire; and he attained it. The whole of the Punjaub and of Sinde were tributary to him. Twice he marched to Delhi, and four times to different points within the Indian empire. In the west he carried his arms as far as Neshapoor and Astrabad. It was he who changed the style of his tribe from Abdallee to Dooranee, having himself assumed, at his coronation, the title of Dooree Dooran; that is, the pearl of the age. He died, worn out by constant exertion of body and mind, in the fiftieth year of his age; and left the monarchy which he had founded to his eldest son, Timour.

Timour Shah possessed no portion of the enterprise, and very little of the talent and vigour of mind, which distinguished his father. He wished to reign in sloth, preferring the pomp to the reality of kingship, and for twenty years kept his seat without the actual loss of any of the provinces. But in his day the seed was sown which advanced to rapid maturity under his successors; for the children of Timour were numerous, and fought for the succession, and amid the confusion incident to these civil wars the sovereignty passed from the whole of them.

Five, out of the many sons of Timour, played conspicuous parts in this ruinous game: namely, Humayoon, the eldest by one wife; Shah Zemaun and Shah Shujah, by another; Shah Mahmoud and Prince Ferooz Oodeen, by a third. Of these, Shah Zemaun—the succession not having been fixed,—proclaimed himself king on his father's decease in 1793; and through the influence of Poynder Khan, otherwise Serafrauz Khan, chief of the powerful Dooranee tribe of Baurickzye, and with the help of other lords, he secured the city of Cabul. He forthwith sent an army against Candahar, of which his brother Humayoon was in possession; and of which the inhabitants seemed disposed, at first, to support the elder branch. But Humayoon did not possess the vigour of character which belonged to Shah Zemaun. His troops fought badly: he was defeated, and became a fugitive; and before the end of the year fell into his brother's hands, and was blinded.

While these struggles went on, Mahmoud, who had acknowledged Zemaun's authority, was permitted to retain his position as Hakim, or governor, at Herat. Prince Ferooz Oodeen also was with him, and seemed disposed, at first, to remain quiet; but by and bye some differences between them arose, whereupon the prince made a pilgrimage to Mecca, and on his return fixed his residence at Iram. Of him history henceforth makes mention as Hadjee Ferooz.

Shah Zemaun was popular, and might have kept the empire, and transmitted it to his descendants, had he given himself to the task of consolidating its looser parts; but this wise policy he neglected, and, entrusting the management of affairs at home to a vizeer who abused his confidence, he wasted his resources in constant, though fruitless invasions of India. His absence called into activity the ambition of his brother Mahmoud, which long lay dormant; and on three separate occasions, in 1794, 1797, and 1799, he raised the standard of rebellion. But he invariably sustained defeat; and was driven at length to take refuge at the court of Persia, where he was flattered or neglected according as suited best the peculiar views which happened at the moment to be in favour with the government of Tehran.

Meanwhile the vizeer, Wuffadar Khan, had rendered both himself and his master so obnoxious to the nobles that a plot was entered into for putting the minister to death, for deposing Shah Zemaun, and setting up his brother by the same mother, Shah Shujah. At the head of this conspiracy, six of the principal chiefs of the Doorannee and Kuzylebash tribes placed themselves. And so well, for a time, were matters managed, that though they held frequent meetings at each other's houses, no suspicion of any evil design seems to have been entertained. Unfortunately for themselves, however, they had admitted a moonshee, or scribe, into their confidence, who betrayed them, and put the vizeer on his guard. Three individuals, namely, Serafrauz Khan, chief of the Baurackzyes; Mohammed Azeem Khan, chief of the Alleckozyes; and Ameer Arslan Khan, head of the powerful Persian tribe of Jewansheer, were stated to be the ringleaders; and one by one they were seized. Mohammed Azeem, considered the most formidable of the whole, gave himself up without resistance. An officer was then sent to apprehend Serafrauz

Khan, whose son, Futteh Khan, proposed to put the functionary to death; but Serafrauz refused to follow that daring course, and submitted. A like fate befel Ameer Arslan, who happened at the time to be resident about court; and the whole, with their partners in the conspiracy, and two other suspected chiefs besides, were summarily executed.

Great and general was the indignation excited among the members of the Dooranee tribe, and one of them, Futteh Khan, the same who counselled resistance to the order of arrest, meditated revenge. He found out Mahmoud, who, with a slender retinue, was passing from place to place in Khorassan. He urged him to withdraw from his Persian allies, and to throw himself unreservedly among his kindred; and Mahmoud, listening to the suggestion, entered the country of the Dooranee tribe, with only fifty horsemen in his train. To a man the clansmen declared in his favour; and after some fighting, and a great deal of treachery on all hands, Zemaun, attended by his late vizeer, Wuffadar, became a fugitive. They halted to refresh at the castle of one Moollah Aushik, a chieftain of the Shianwarree clan, and a dependant or protégé of the vizeer. This man betrayed them; and Wuffadar and his brothers being put to death upon the spot, Zemaun was blinded and carried to Cabul, in the Balla Hissaur, or citadel, of which he became a state prisoner.

Mahmoud ascended the throne amid the triumphant shouts of his adherents, but was soon found not to possess any of the qualities which are necessary to command the respect of a turbulent people. He regarded nothing but his own pleasures, leaving both the cares of government and the toils of war to his ministers. These were able men, for Futteh Khan was one of them; but they either did not dare, or proved little inclined to interfere with the humours of their brother chiefs; and the whole country became in consequence one wide field of private quarrel and military licence. Moreover, though the capital and the districts dependent upon it acknowledged Mahmoud, the provinces paid no heed to his behests. His brother Ferooz, while he rendered to him a nominal allegiance, seized and held Heraut. The north-eastern countries would acknowledge no other sovereign than Zemaun; and suddenly a new rival sprang up in the person of Prince Shujah-ool-Mulk, the full brother of Zemaun Khan, and a young man about

twenty years of age. This youth, who had been left in Peshawur with a small party of Zemaun's guards, to take care of his family and jewels, no sooner recovered from the panic which the first tidings of the revolution occasioned, than he came to the resolution of proclaiming himself king; and by a liberal distribution of money among the tribes in the neighbourhood soon saw the greater part of them gather round his standard.

To march upon Cabul with ten thousand men was his obvious policy, and he adopted it; but being met by Futteh Khan at the head of three thousand, in a narrow plain bounded by hills, he was totally defeated. He escaped with difficulty to the settlements of the Khyberees, by whom he was sheltered. Meanwhile a more serious rebellion, if such it deserve to be called, had broken out in another quarter, and the constitution of the empire was shaken to its foundation. The next most powerful tribe to the Dooraunees was that of the Ghilzies, who in ancient days used to give a king to the whole of the Afghan nation, and who, having faithfully preserved their genealogies, set up Abdooreheem as the living representative of the old royal family. Some bloody battles were fought between the rival factions, which ended in favour of the Dooraunees, though not till the fortunes of the victors had more than once been reduced to the lowest ebb, and Shujah-ool-Mulk having sustained a second defeat, the throne of Mahmoud seemed to be secure. But it was not so. Persia had taken advantage of the civil war to complete the conquest of a large portion of Khorassan. The head of the Beloches refused to acknowledge so feeble a government: of the Afghan tribes themselves, many set up for independence; and the treasury being empty, and the king altogether wanting in personal weight and influence, there were no means at hand whereby to reduce them to order. Under these circumstances Futteh Khan was directed to march with as strong a force as could be collected against the factious. He levied a fine upon Peshawur, extorted fifty thousand rupees from the chief of Cashmere, and passing through different districts, raised the revenue from each, and came, in the summer of 1803, to Candahar. But while he thus exerted himself, the death of his colleague Akram Khan in Cabul precipitated the downfal of Mahmoud. Released from the restraint which his ministers used to put upon him, the dis-

solute king ran into all manner of excesses, and being eagerly copied by his Kuzylebash guards, the whole city became convulsed with rapine and licentiousness. There were chiefs there, particularly one Mookhtar Oodowlah, who could not endure the degradation to which the nation seemed to be reduced; and these provoking a sort of religious revolt, destroyed the king's guards, and shut him up in the Bala Hissaur. They then sent for Shujah-ool-Mulk, whom they proclaimed; and having met and defeated Futteh Khan, when marching to the relief of Mahmoud, they compelled the latter to surrender himself, and placed Shujah on the throne.

Shah Shujah-ool-Mulk ascended the throne of Cabul in 1803. If deficient in energy, and therefore little qualified to fill the arduous station to which he had been raised, the accounts of his very enemies agree in representing him as placable, humane, generous, and, as far as circumstances would allow, just and true to his word. The difficulties, indeed, which beset him, and led to his eventual overthrow, had their roots in these dispositions; for he treated Mahmoud tenderly, sparing his eyesight—and made no endeavour to escape from the many engagements into which, while playing an up-hill game, he had entered. The consequences were, that the revenue was all expended in a vain endeavour to appease the cupidity of men who proved to be insatiable, and that the troops, kept far in arrear with their pay, ceased to be trustworthy. Of these circumstances the partisans of Mahmoud made good use. Futteh Khan, in particular, smarting under the mortification to which he had been subjected, by the rejection of his proposal, to become vizier under the new régime, went into rebellion, and after a succession of conspiracies and revolts—which it would be as tedious as unprofitable to particularise—Shujah was again driven into exile, whereupon Mahmoud, his brother, resumed the reins of government.

These events befel in 1809, a season of some anxiety to the British government, when Napoleon was understood to be negociating with Russia and Persia for the free passage of his troops, if not for assistance, in the invasion of India. The deposed Shah fled for safety into the Punjaub, where Runjeet Singh was now supreme; but the Afghan empire did not, in consequence, obtain rest. On the contrary, there was war in all its borders;

chief after chief asserting his independence, and Persia, the ancient enemy of the whole, pressing them continually. Of Shah Shujah's repeated attempts to recover the throne, between 1809 and 1815, the space at our command will not permit us to take particular notice. Enough is done, when we state, that though gallantly undertaken, they all failed mainly through some constitutional weakness on the part of the Shah, which rendered him incapable of directing the movements of an army in the field; so that he became the object during their progress, of much treacherous treatment, as well from his own chiefs as from Runjeet Singh. From these he finally delivered himself by escaping with his family across the English frontier; within which, at the town of Loodianah, an honourable asylum was afforded him.

While Shujah-ool-Mulk thus dwelt in safety under the protection of the British standard, there had arisen between Shah Mahmoud and his powerful vizeer, Futteh Khan, grounds of mutual altercation, which led, in due time, to very tragical results. The brothers of the vizeer, be it observed, were everywhere established in places of influence and power. One executed the office of Governor of Cabul; another was supreme at Peshawur; a third was at the head of affairs in Cashmere—in a word, the strength of the empire was in their hands. Heraut, however, was held by Hajee Ferooz Deen, the brother of Shah Mahmoud, to whose son the Shah had given his daughter in marriage; and the Shah, having become jealous of his relative, desired to gain possession of the place. Futteh Khan heartily co-operated with him, though, as was alleged, for selfish purposes, and a plan was arranged for getting the Hajee, who suspected no evil, into the power of his brother.

It had long been the policy of Persia to open a way for her armies into the heart of Central Asia; and to gain Heraut, and establish there a base for future operations, was a measure often attempted, though heretofore without success. Hajee Ferooz Deen complained that he was threatened with a siege, and Futteh Khan, putting himself at the head of the royal army, marched to his relief. There followed in his train the youngest of his brothers, Dost Mohammed by name; a young man who on many previous occasions had given proof of extreme courage and a

very reckless disposition; and to him the vizeer committed the task of accomplishing by guile that which the application of mere force would have probably failed to effect. The Afghans met the Persians, and a battle ensued, from which each party withdrew, under the impression that it had sustained a defeat: nevertheless the vizeer rallied his forces under the walls of Heraut; and a series of intrigues began, with the results of which we are, for the present, alone concerned. The unsuspecting Hajee was persuaded to visit the vizeer at his camp, and to admit Dost Mohammed with an armed party into the citadel. That he should be made prisoner and Heraut occupied was no more than Shah Mahmoud had provided for; but Dost Mohammed went much further. He broke into the Zenana, or women's apartments belonging to the Hajee's son; and dishonoured the wife of that prince, in other words, Mahmoud's daughter. Such an outrage could not, of course, be forgiven; and as Mohammed effected his escape, Futteh Khan was charged with having suggested the offence; and being seized by Prince Kamran, the son of Mahmoud and the brother of the ill-used lady, he was, with circumstances of peculiar cruelty, deprived of his sight.

"The shout of Vizier Futteh Khan," says an able writer, "as the knife of the executioner was thrust into his visual organs, was that of the expiring Afghan monarchy." All his brothers heard of the deed with horror; and they who had been unfeignedly indignant with Dost Mohammed, and, some in pretence, others in reality, had joined in pursuit of him, took up arms in order to avenge the wrongs of the blinded man. They made peace, moreover, with the fugitive; who, being beyond comparison their superior in talent, soon acquired an ascendancy over them. It does not, however, appear that their designs extended further than the deposition, perhaps the death, of Mahmoud, and the setting up of another branch of the Suddozye family in his room; nor had they so much as agreed among themselves as to the individual who should be raised to the throne. But the plans and arrangements of men of inferior genius are everywhere bent by a master spirit to its own purposes; and hence Dost Mohammed, partly by fraud, partly by violence, succeeded in thrusting the house of Suddozye wholly aside. It is due to the character of

Shah Shujah to state, that in the midst of the troubles incident on this systematised rebellion, he made another attempt to recover the crown of Cabul. He was, however, deceived, betrayed, and finally defeated, and escaped once more to Loodianah, where for many years he dwelt peaceably in the bosom of his family.

While the civil war went on, Futteh Khan was barbarously hacked to pieces by order of Shah Mahmoud and his son Kamran. The cruel deed served but to exasperate the Baurackzye brothers, who, sometimes uniting their strength, sometimes acting independently, overthrew in all quarters the representatives of the rival house. They then began to quarrel among themselves, till at last the star of Dost Mohammed rose above the others, and he found himself master of Cabul and Ghuznee, and in a condition to give the law, in some sort, to his relatives. But the authority thus wielded was much more nominal than real. The several chiefs pursued each his own course, uniting with him whom they yet acknowledged as their head, only when great and pressing occasions required. Nevertheless, the progress made by the Dost towards the re-establishment of the Doorannee empire, though slow, was steady. He gained ground upon his rivals day by day; and whether through fear, or because they hoped for rest under his strong government, the city of Cabul, with the provinces immediately dependant upon it, paid to him willing obedience. He steadily refused, however, to assume the title of Shah, alleging that he had no treasure, and that a king without money was the most helpless of human beings. Nor were his scruples in regard to this point overcome to the last. Shah Shujah made, in 1834, his final effort, single-handed, to regain the position from which he had fallen. He was joined by many Rohillas, Seikhs, Hindostanees, and men from Scinde, and advanced as far as Candahar, to which he laid siege. There Dost Mohammed attacked him, and after a battle which seems to have been strangely mismanaged on both sides, gave him a total defeat. Shujah fled once more to Loodianah; and Dost Mohammed permitting himself on the field to be saluted as Amir, exercised henceforth more than kingly authority in Cabul.

CHAPTER III.

Early Negociations with Afghanistan—Preparations for its Invasion.

EVER since the foundations of British power in the East were laid, there has been more or less of intercourse between the rulers of Cabul and the representatives of the British government. For a while, indeed, this seems to have been on our part the effect rather of our fears, than of a higher motive. Nadir Shah had left a terrible name behind, which Shah Ahmed did his best to emulate; and in Shah Zemaun's time it was found necessary to assemble an army of observation on the frontier, lest the Afghan should march, as he had engaged to do, to the assistance of Tippoo Saib, with whom the Anglo-Indian empire was then at war. There followed this movement repeated missions—now to the court of Persia for the purpose of negotiating a diversion, as often as an inroad of the mountaineers towards Delhi was apprehended—now to Cabul when the prevailing cause of alarm chanced to be, that the French would contract an alliance with the Persians, and pass, by their help, through Central Asia, to the invasion of British India. It is not necessary to particularize the whole of these, nor yet to describe in detail the results to which they led. Enough is done when we state, that either because of the diplomatic skill with which they were managed, or that the dangers which they were designed to obviate proved more imaginary than real, the territories of the English in India have suffered no violation, though they have been continually extending themselves, and bid fair ere long to comprehend the entire Peninsula, from Cape Comorin to the Indus.

As the fear of invasion subsided there arose a laudable ambition to enter with the natives of Central Asia into more intimate commercial relations. The opening of the Indus to the trade of England and of British India was especially desired, and

it was proposed in 1832 to communicate upon this subject with the governments of those countries, which from their local situation had it mainly in their power either to forward or to retard, if not entirely to frustrate, the arrangement. There were three such states, of unequal magnitude, which interposed at this time between the frontiers of British India and the river. The Punjaub, extending as far as the Hindoo Cush from the point, where the waters of the Sutlej join those of the Indus, obeyed the authority of Runjeet Singh, a successful adventurer, and an able though unprincipled chief, between whom and the British government a treaty of amity subsisted. The Punjaub was joined, and in part overlapped by Bahwalpore, a small principality which followed the course of the river downwards to about latitude 27°. And finally Scinde, over which a number of Ameers or petty princes held sway—themselves foreigners and nearly related to one another—took the line up and carried it on to the sea;—and the country on both banks of the Indus was thus far within their jurisdiction. With the heads of these several states treaties were entered into, which gave such promise of good that it was deemed advisable to push the matter farther, and to make a great effort—in the words of Lord Auckland, "to gain for the British nation in Central Asia that legitimate influence which an interchange of benefits would naturally produce."

With this view, or rather, to use the terms of the Simla proclamation, "with a view to invite the aid of the *de facto* rulers of Afghanistan to the measures necessary for giving full effect to these treaties," Captain Burnes was deputed towards the close of the year 1836, on a mission to Dost Mohammed Khan, the chief of Cabul. The progress of this mission, as well as the strange misapprehensions which induced the Envoy to withdraw from the scene of his labours at a very critical moment, are well known. A conviction seems, whether rightly or not, for some time previous to have matured itself in the minds of the local authorities, that peace with Afghanistan, so long as it should submit to its then government, was impossible. They had satisfied themselves that Dost Mohammed Khan was in friendly communication with the enemies of British power in the East. He was charged with having sanctioned the advance of a Persian army

to Heraut, and to have connived at the siege of that place, which was then carried on. It was laid to his door as an act of hostility towards England, that he had made an unsuccessful effort to wrest Peshawur out of the hands of Runjeet Singh, and was prepared to renew it. And, finally, a Russian officer made his appearance in Cabul, and it was concluded that he came thither in order to make arrangements for the invasion, sooner or later, of British India, by the forces of the Czar. We are not going to analyze the process of reasoning which led to these several conclusions. It is sufficiently set forth in the document to which reference has actually been made; and whether well or ill-founded, led to results which must long be remembered on both banks of the Indus, and, as will be made more apparent from day to day, are still only in progress.

There was to be war in disguise between British India, and the tribes which occupy the different provinces of Afghanistan. The object of this movement was not to be, on the part of England, the extension of her territory by conquests achieved in Central Asia; but the restoration of peace to a country torn by civil dissensions, and the establishment in power of a prince well disposed towards a British alliance, and able and willing to counteract the objects of whatever states might meditate designs hostile to British interests. Shujah Doulab-ool-Mulk was considered to be the individual marked out for the accomplishment of these important objects; and though he had been repeatedly driven into exile, and now resided within the precincts of the English territories, "his popularity at home was said by the Governor-General to have been proved by the best authorities." It was accordingly resolved to espouse his cause. "His Majesty Shujah-ool-Mulk," says the Simla Manifesto, "will enter Afghanistan surrounded by his own troops, and will be supported against foreign interference and factious opposition by a British army." That the probabilities, both of foreign interference and of factious opposition, were calculated largely, the extent of the preparations esteemed necessary to defeat the one, and overcome the other, demonstrate.

The first step to be taken was to come to a right understanding with the powers whose territory intervened between the most advanced of the British posts, and the country in which it

was proposed that the British army should operate. Under the management of Mr. MacNaghten, at that time Secretary to the Government of India with the Governor-General, a treaty was accordingly concluded, whereby Runjeet Singh undertook to co-operate with the British Government in the restoration of Shujah-ool-Mulk to the throne, on the understanding that the Maha Rajah should be left in possession of the provinces which, amid the troubles of late years, he had wrested from the kingdom of Cabul. We further know, from Lord Auckland's Manifesto, "that a guaranteed independence was, on favourable terms, to be tendered to the Ameers of Scinde; and that the integrity of Heraut, in the possession of its present ruler, would be respected. Thus on both flanks of his dominions, the legitimate king was to be cut short; for Heraut, being in possession of the son of Shah Mahmoud, would be as little subject to his sway in the west as Peshawur, now occupied by a Seikh garrison, would obey him in the east.

These points being settled, two corps d'armée were directed to assemble—one in the province or presidency of Bengal, the other at Bombay. The former, consisting of five brigades of infantry, one cavalry brigade, with artillery, engineers, &c., in proportion, was to be told off into two divisions; of which Major-General Sir Willoughby Cotton, G.C.B., K.C.H., was to command the first; and Major-General Duncan to command the second. The divisions comprised respectively the following regiments brigaded together, under the officers whose names are given :—

First Division of Infantry—three brigades.

First Brigade :—

COLONEL SALE, C.B., ... H. M. 13th Light Infantry.
16th Regiment Native Infantry.
H. M. 13th Light Infantry.
48th Regiment Native Infantry.

Second Brigade :—

COLONEL NOTT . . . . . 42nd Native Infantry.
42nd Native Infantry.
31st Native Infantry.
43rd Native Infantry.

Third Brigade :—

COLONEL DENNIS . . . . . H. M. 3rd Buffs.
27th Regiment Native Infantry.
H. M. 3rd Buffs.
2nd Regiment Native Infantry.
One Company of Sappers.

Second Division of Infantry, MAJOR-GENERAL DUNCAN.

Fourth Brigade :—

LIEUT.-COL. ROBERTS . . . . Bengal European Regiment.
35th Regiment Native Infantry.
Bengal European Regiment.
37th Regiment Native Infantry.

Fifth Brigade :—

LIEUT.-COL. WORSLEY . . . . 28th Native Infantry.
5th Native Infantry.
28th Native Infantry.
53rd Native Infantry.
One Company of Sappers.

The cavalry brigade, of which Col. Arnold, H. M. 16th Lancers, was at the head, mustered :—

2nd Regiment Light Cavalry.
H. M. 16th Lancers.
3rd Regiment Light Cavalry.

The artillery, commanded by Lieut.-Col. Graham, Bengal Horse Artillery, comprehended :—

2nd troop, 2nd brigade, Horse Artillery.
3rd troop, 2nd brigade, ditto.
3rd company, 2nd battalion.
4th ditto ditto.
2nd company, 6th battalion.

The collective regular force set apart at Bengal for service across the Indus may be estimated at ten thousand men. Meanwhile Bombay was gathering together its corps under Lieut.-General Sir John Keane, which, consisting of two infantry and one cavalry brigades, with artillery and engineers, could not

fall much short of six thousand men. The regiments employed were:—

First Infantry Brigade:—

Col. Wiltshire, Lieut. Col. H. M. 2nd	H. M. 2nd, or Queen's Regiment.
	19th Regiment Native Infantry.
	H. M. 17th Regiment.

Second Brigade:—

Col. Gordon	1st	Regiment	Native Infantry.
	2nd	ditto	ditto.
	5th	ditto	ditto.

The cavalry, consisting of two squadrons, H. M. 4th Light Dragoons and the 1st regiment of Light Cavalry, was commanded by Lieut.-Col. Scott, of the 4th Light Dragoons; while at the head of the artillery, nearly two troops of horse artillery and two companies of foot artillery, Col. Stevenson was placed. Both corps, it is worthy of remark, were attended by bodies of irregular horse. The Poonah auxiliaries, as they were called, accompanied the column from Bombay, while the Bengal column was attended by a force of which, for obvious reasons, it is necessary to give a somewhat more detailed description.

It was the policy of the British government to speak on all occasions of the inroad into Afghanistan as the effort of a dethroned sovereign to recover his rights, and of the part played in it by their own troops as that of mere auxiliaries. An army of his own was therefore essential to the dignity of Shah Shujah; and as he does not appear to have had a single Afghan near him, measures were taken to supply the deficiency from a different quarter. Inducements were held out to the followers of the British camp, to wandering Belooches, Seikhs, and men of every tribe, to enrol themselves as soldiers of the King of Cabul; and about eight thousand, tolerably well armed, but of course altogether undisciplined, were got together. Of these the son of the Shah, the Shezada Timour, as he was called, nominally took the command, the charge being entrusted, in point of fact, to Col. Simpson, of the 19th Native Infantry. There attended them a distinct staff, a commissariat, and a military chest. Thus the outward show of that native force which the soldiers

of the Company were informed that they were to accompany and sustain, was provided, while the whole cost and care of paying, victualling, and transporting the same devolved upon British agents and the British treasury.

The plan of campaign had arranged that while the Bombay column, proceeding by sea to the mouth of the Indus, should land there and operate upwards to Sukkur, and thence over the table-land of Belochistan and the Bolan Pass upon Candahar, the force from Bengal should concentrate at some convenient point near the frontiers of the Punjaub, whence it might move upon Peshawur, and traverse the Khyberee Hills, and proceed by Jellalabad and the Tezeen Valley to Cabul. Difficulties both columns were expected to meet; for it was known that the roads were bad, and the tribes inhabiting the mountain-ranges fierce and hostile; but the friendship of Runjeet Singh being secured, and that of the Ameers of Scinde taken for granted, the possibility of a repulse or a disaster appears never to have been contemplated. Accordingly, during the months of July, August, and September, troops marched by regiments and squadrons from very distant points upon Simla, where a camp was formed, and the Governor-General joined it. Here General Sir Henry Fane, who had been requested to undertake the command of the expedition, issued his first general order, and here also was published the document which, in the form of a manifesto, was intended to inform the world in general, and the countries of the East in particular, for what reasons the representatives of the Honourable Company of Merchants, whose office is in Leadenhall-street, had assumed an attitude so hostile towards their unoffending neighbours. Then followed reviews, further orders, the distribution of the force into corps and brigades, and, in due time, an advance upon Ferozepore, where, in the course of the latter days of November, the whole were assembled.

The friendship of semi-barbarous princes is not much to be relied upon; and Runjeet Singh, the ancient ally, as he was called, of the British nation, proved no exception to the rule. He assembled, it is true, fifteen thousand men, with which he proposed to support the Shah's troops, and exchanged entertainments, reviews, and diplomatic conferences with his allies; but he declined to permit the march of the latter through his

dominions, or the establishment of a place of arms at Peshawur. This was vexatious enough, yet the annoyance did not befal single-handed; for while the army was still moving up the rear of its strength to Ferozepore, intelligence came in, which, had it arrived three months earlier, might, perhaps, have obviated the necessity of assembling the force altogether. The Persians, it appeared, had raised the siege of Heraut; and thus the fear of opposition to Shah Shujah from without could no longer be pleaded as an excuse for the advance of more than his own followers into a country where his arrival had been stated to be looked for with impatience. What was now to be done? Abandon an enterprise, on the wisdom of which the judgment of so many had been declared, and permit an army to return without striking a blow, such, in point of efficiency and splendour, as British India had never before brought together? The idea was not to be entertained. Besides, who could tell what amount of duplicity might be hidden behind this sudden retreat of the Persians into their own country? They might have retired only to recruit their numbers, or to await the arrival of a Russian reserve; or the movement might have been made for the single purpose of deceiving us into the relinquishment of our designs. It was not, therefore, considered becoming to stop short of the re-establishment of Shah Shujah on his throne. Nevertheless, as the prospect of resistance was not now what at one period it seemed to be, a corresponding diminution in the numbers of the auxiliary corps to be employed was determined upon; and Sir Henry Fane, whose health was, moreover, infirm, resigned the command.

Under this change of circumstances it was determined to send across the Indus only three brigades of infantry from Bengal, namely, the first, second, and fourth, with two troops of horse artillery and a battery of nine-pounders. In the strength of the regular cavalry no alteration was made; and the whole, now regarded as a single division of the army of the Indus, was placed under the orders of Major-General Sir Willoughby Cotton. A route, moreover, was assigned to it down the course of the Gharra as far as Sukkur, where, having formed a junction with the Bombay column, it was to cross the Indus, and penetrate, by way of Candahar and Ghuznee, upon Cabul. Well, and with

exceeding order, the movement was accomplished. Shah Shujah's contingent led the way, keeping two or three marches a-head of the British troops; the British troops followed by brigades at short intervals, and, the Rajah of Bhawalpore proving faithful to his engagements, supplies were found in abundance at every stage. It was not exactly so after the border line of Scinde had been passed. The Ameers, relishing the presence of the English in their villages as little as they approved of the threatened re-annexation of their territories to the Dooranee empire, exhibited as hostile a temper as prudence would sanction, and failed to furnish either forage or provisions, except in insufficient quantities. Nevertheless, the columns moved on, the men's pressing wants being provided for by the activity and skilful management of their own officers: and it was found, when the day of halt arrived, that, except through the desertion of some of their camp-followers and baggage animals, no loss whatever had been sustained.

A good many camels, particularly of those attached to the cavalry, had died or disappeared during this march; and recourse was had in consequence to water-conveyance for a portion of the baggage. This was an arrangement which did not promise much with reference to future operations, neither were the prospective difficulties of the campaign diminished, when it was ascertained, soon after the arrival of the advanced guard in front of Bukkur, that a feeling decidedly hostile had begun to manifest itself among the Ameers. The Bombay division, it appeared, had not made good its landing without opposition. The shipping had been fired upon by an inconsiderable fort which commanded the mouth of the Indus, and the admiral, in self-defence, had been obliged to reduce it to ruins. Moreover, after the debarkation was effected, the absence of all means of transport, except such as the ships' boats could afford, kept the force many days stationary. At length the column set forward, and on the 28th of December Sir John Keane established his head-quarters at Tatta. But here again fresh difficulties arose. The Ameers refused to furnish a single beast of burden; they impeded as much as possible the bringing in of grain and other supplies, and drawing towards Hyderabad about twenty-five thousand men, assumed an attitude of decided hostility. There was no longer an alternative as to

the course which the British army must pursue. Sir Henry Fane, who was proceeding towards Bombay by water, and descending the Sutlej to the Indus, kept parallel with the Bengal column, recommended that the latter should detach a force for the purpose of co-operating with the Bombay division, and compelling the Ameers to pay more respect to their engagements.

It may be questioned *now* whether the interests of British India would not have been better served had the struggle, which at one period seemed to be inevitable, taken place. There could be no confidence, and there was none, between the English government and the Ameers from that day forth; and the latter, as it was subsequently ascertained, had communicated their suspicions to several chiefs on the further side of the Indus. Nevertheless, as the active exertions of Col. Pottinger, and the friendly disposition of the Rao of Cutch, succeeded in laying the storm for the moment, all parties seemed to rejoice. Then came camels sufficient to transport imperfectly the more necessary baggage of the Bombay column. They were procured from Cutch at a very critical moment; and Sir John Keane, who had delayed only till they should arrive, forthwith began his upward march.

Meanwhile the Bengal column, including Shah Shujah's contingent, was making its way steadily toward the field of future operations. The Shah, with his durbar, crossed the Indus at Shikarpore, and pitched their tents at Sarkhanny, on the opposite bank. The British troops encamped under the walls of Roree, that they might cover the construction of a bridge of boats, and thus secure their own communications with the rear. The spot which the engineers selected as suitable for this purpose was an island in the centre of the stream, which the fortress of Sukkur occupies; and of this the previous treaty with the Ameers had provided that the English should obtain temporary possession. But it is one thing to sign a treaty, and another to fulfil it.

CHAPTER IV.

Passage of the Indus—March upon Candahar.

Of the alarm of the Ameers, and their anxiety to evade the fulfilment of the treaty into which they had been drawn, it is not the business of the present narrative to speak. Long and by various crooked methods they endeavoured to protract the surrender of Bukkur, a stronghold upon a rock in the middle of the Indus, which, as forming a convenient place of arms, the officer commanding the British army was directed to occupy. But they yielded at length; and with country boats and planks, mostly sawn from the date-groves near at hand, the Indus was bridged. Meanwhile, however, the intelligence which came in from the Bombay column retarded the passage of the army. The Ameers of Lower Scinde evinced day by day a more hostile disposition, and Col. Pottinger, having fairly announced to them that the arrears of tribute due to the sovereign of Cabul would be exacted, they charged the British government with bad faith, and avowed their determination to fight it out. Of course the navigation of the Indus was stopped. With Hyderabad commanding its course, and armed to resist the passage of vessels bearing the English flag, it had become alike impossible for Sir Henry Fane to prosecute his voyage, and for any portion of the force from Bombay to ascend to Roree. Accordingly Sir Henry Fane landed, and, once more assuming the command of the army of the Indus, directed a brigade of cavalry, with two brigades of infantry, to advance against the refractory city and subdue it. The troops had not, however, approached within sight of Hyderabad when it was announced by a despatch from General Keane that the Ameers had submitted. An immediate return to Roree took place, and the Bengal column crossed the Indus.

Doubts had been entertained in many quarters how far the

sepoys would pass with alacrity a river which Hindoos regard as the appointed limit to their wanderings. These were now dispelled; for the native regiments, one by one cheering as they went, marched across the bridge, and seizing the drag-ropes of the field artillery, drew the pieces after them. Indeed, the passage of the Indus is described by those who witnessed it to have been a military spectacle of the most imposing kind. The battering train and heavy shot were towed from one bank to another on rafts. The cavalry crossed on foot, each man and officer leading his horse on the left; the infantry, with their measured tread, caused the planks to sway to and fro; and last of all, protected by a strong rear guard, came long lines of camels. Several days were of necessity required to accomplish this important operation; for though the number of fighting men did not exceed ten thousand, the whole body of people, including followers and servants, could not come short of six times that number. And hence, though the leading brigade passed on the 14th of February, the 20th had arrived ere the whole force was concentrated round the head-quarter tent at Shikarpore.

The entire breadth of Cutch Gundava, from the right bank of the Indus to Muhesir, on the Bolan river, is a plain. Little herbage covers it for a space of twenty-seven English miles, and in the centre it degenerates into a sandy desert. No vegetation, beyond here and there a sprinkling of wild caper, and other shrubs of the sort, relieves its barrenness; and water is to be procured only at such pits or wells as travellers and caravans may have dug for their own use, and abstained from filling up again after they had refreshed themselves. To march a single column of ten or twelve thousand troops, with beasts of burthen and swarms of followers, over such a country as this, is clearly impossible. By small detachments only can an army make head, and by small detachments the British force was on the present occasion carried forward. The cavalry led the way. Infantry by brigades, and guns as they could be most conveniently transported, followed. No loss among the armed men was experienced; but camels and other beasts of burthen dropped and died in considerable numbers; while the hostile disposition of the inhabitants soon began to show itself in the attacks which they made upon stragglers and baggage.

The march across this plain having been successfully accomplished, a brief halt occurred, in order that time might be given for closing up the rear, and collecting on the proposed line of future operations such supplies as by purchase or otherwise might be procurable. This done, the column again moved on through some difficult ravines as far as Dadur, where Sir John Keane, who had conducted the Bombay contingent up the left of the Indus to Sukkur, opened a communication with it. A few changes took place in the disposition and command of the several corps by his direction. Sir Willoughby Cotton, for example, was placed permanently at the head of the Bengal division; Brevet Major-Gen. Wiltshire at the head of that from Bombay; and the commissariats of both being so organised as that they might support without ever crossing or clashing with one another, preparations were made for threading the Bolan pass, not far from the mouth of which the tents of the Bengal portion of the army were already pitched.

The pass or rift which constitutes the only approach from Cutch Gundavà into the great valley of Shawl, winds for a space of about sixty miles among the Brahoiek mountains, and carries the traveller, by a wild and desolate road, to an extreme elevation of about 5000 feet above the level of the sea. It varies, in regard to width, from several miles to thirty or forty yards, now opening out into wide glens, now narrowing into mere gorges, which seem in their windings as if they would block up from time to time all further means of progress against the wayfarer. The hills on either hand are abrupt and perpendicular, being principally formed of the pudding-stone rock; and through the gorge runs a river, which in the dry season nowhere exceeds two feet in depth, but which, in heavy rain, and during the melting of the snow, is liable to be swollen into a torrent. As may be guessed, the road is little better than a waving line of pebbles, across which, seeking out declivities wherever it can, the stream passes perpetually; while the banks are composed entirely of huge boulders or loose stones, which the waters have rolled downwards in their might and left to settle as their strength receded. Such a pass, overlooked in all its narrower veins by clefts, among which marksmen may stand, and high precipices, from the summits of which loosened rocks may be

hurled, presents to the eye of the soldier no common appearance. If defended by a handful of resolute men, the largest army that ever took the field would in vain strive to force it; for a few traverses would effectually block the mouth of the narrow gorges, and women, or even children, stationed on the pinnacles above, could, without the smallest danger to themselves, crush the column, while advancing to surmount these traverses, by rolling down huge stones upon their heads.

Such was the pass towards the mouth of which the leading column of the army of the Indus was now approaching; and on the 15th of March, some hours before daylight, the advanced guard entered it. The force in question consisted of detachments of all arms—infantry, cavalry, and artillery. There was likewise a prudent intermixture of European with Native troops, the latter being found to work best, on all occasions, by the side of their more hardy comrades; and, finally, the whole division was distributed, after the same fashion, into brigades, which were put in motion, with such intervals between, that one should never overtake, nor thus of course incommode, the other. It was calculated, that unless active opposition were offered, each brigade might manage to thread the defile in about six days; and Providence favouring the expedition, the expectations of the leaders were fulfilled: for no enemy presented himself to resist the march, and the hardy enterprise was accomplished. But it was not accomplished without considerable anxiety, and some loss. Numbers of camels, unaccustomed to such journeys, dropped down and died. A furious storm of wind and rain assailed the troops while entangled in the narrow defile, and caused the river to rise so rapidly, that the corps of engineers, who led the van, had well nigh perished. Bands of robbers also hung upon the rear, cutting off baggage and murdering stragglers; and of forage there was none, save such as the commissariat brought onwards with them. Nevertheless the exploit was performed without any serious detriment to the general efficiency of the army, and in due time the whole was once more concentrated under the walls of Quetta, a rudely fortified town in the province of Shawl, and the head of an inferior district.

There was grass and ghee for about a month's consumption with the force, when it broke up from Dadur. Little more than

a fortnight's supply remained when the tents were pitched at Quetta. The hostile disposition of the inhabitants began likewise to make itself more manifest every day. Nobody brought in supplies; and all the efforts of Sir Alexander Burnes and other officials to procure them led to nothing. Mehrab Khan, the nominal chief of Khelat, with whom a sort of treaty had been concluded, hung back, and seemed indisposed, now that the English were in the heart of the country, to execute its terms. With the rear, likewise, communications could not but become every day more insecure. Doubtless the advance of the Bombay division would re-open the pass for a while; but supposing that it should make good its progress as little harassed as the division that preceded it, what good could arise? The moment the entire army should have placed the Brahoiek mountains between them and the Indus, they must depend upon the produce of the country, and the exertions of their own officials for subsistence: and whether these would suffice continued for some time to be regarded as a problem as difficult of solution as it was critical in its details.

It is well known that during the halt of the Bengal column in the vicinity of Quetta, Sir John Keane with the Bombay force, and Shah Shujah's contingent, struggled manfully to get forward from Bukkŭr. He passed the plains without sustaining much molestation; but received no mark of kindness at the hands of any one. As he drew towards the hills, likewise, the people seemed better prepared to offer resistance than they had been while General Cotton traversed their country. No army ventured, indeed, to face him in the field, but the system of plunder and attack upon stragglers was carried on more vigorously than ever; and on one occasion, in the Bolan pass, a valuable convoy fell into the hands of the Belooches, the escort having been cut to pieces. It was observed, also, that not a man of weight and influence came to join the king. On the contrary, the few whom considerations of policy had induced to seek his presence while yet at Shikarpore, he had so disgusted by his coldness that they returned to their homes, and spread abroad tidings every way unfavourable. Neither was the intelligence received from the front more cheering. At Candahar three brothers, members of the Baurakzye family, were stated to be making vigorous preparations

for defence. The standard of the Prophet was about to be raised, and a holy war proclaimed; and every male capable of wielding a matchlock would be turned out to harass the Feringhees. But there was a good spirit in the British army. Already had the troops been put upon half rations, while the camp followers were reduced to a quarter of their accustomed supply; the forage, likewise, had been curtailed in similar proportions, till both cavalry and artillery had ceased, through the weariness of their horses, to be serviceable: yet not a murmur was heard in the camp; and when, on the 6th of April, orders were issued to continue the march, men and officers prepared to carry them into execution with equal cheerfulness and confidence of success.

On the 7th of April, at an early hour in the morning, the forward movement began. It carried the column, and its huge train of followers and beasts of burthen, through a very varied country; a wide plain, arid and barren, being succeeded by a gorge or pass, and mountain streams here and there interposing to the passage of the guns obstacles of no ordinary nature. The marches were in consequence short; yet the fatigue to man and beast proved excessive: for a grievous absence of supplies, water itself failing in many places, occasioned universal weakness, which is in all situations accompanied by more or less dejection of spirits. The mortality among the cavalry horses was great. Camels, also, lay down and died, or fell over precipices, and with their loads perished: while marauders hung upon the line of march, and committed many outrages. The progress through the Kojak pass in particular, a rift in the Khojeh Amram mountains, though less tedious, was to the full as difficult as the threading of the Bolan, and cost the army much baggage, especially in its descent into the farther plains, through the inability of the camels to hold their footing upon a track that was both steep and loose. Moreover, as the force was now in an enemy's country, and the talk of opposition became distinct, it was found necessary to conduct every operation with care. No more tents were sent forward, or pitched in time to shelter the troops, on their arrival, from the sun. On the contrary, the baggage moved in rear of the leading brigade, and was covered in its own rear by the Shah's contingent; and in the long column no further

breaks were allowed than the nature of the ground to be traversed rendered unavoidable. Nevertheless no enemy worth forming up to receive met them; and on the 26th, Candahar, the ancient capital of the Doorannee empire, was reached. It was entered by the first brigade without a shot having been fired, except at plunderers. There had been much expectation on both sides of a vigorous resistance ere Candahar should fall. Three brothers, who held it in a sort of feudal dependence on Dost Mohammed, had collected a considerable force, and gave out, that they should stop the invaders in the Kojak pass, and if worsted there, try the chances of a siege. Dost Mohammed, also, had encouraged them to strike a blow by repeated assurances that he would march to their support: but when the storm drew near their courage forsook them. One of their number made his peace with Shah Shujah, whom he joined, bringing in his train a retinue of two hundred horsemen. The others fled, and, though pursued by Sir Robert Sale as far as the Helmund, succeeded in escaping into Persia. Upon this both the city and the territory attached to it submitted. Shah Shujah caused himself to be proclaimed; and on the plain in front of his palace, the British army pitched their tents. Then, the Bombay contingent having joined in the highest possible order, the whole were reviewed; and provisions being abundant, and supplies of all kinds cheap, two months were devoted to obtaining the rest and refreshment of which both men and horses stood by this time greatly in need.

CHAPTER V.

March upon Ghuznee—Capture of the Place—March on Cabul.

THERE was no increase of good feeling on the part of the inhabitants towards the invaders. The province submitted, or appeared to submit, to the rule of Shah Shujah, but of enthusiasm in his cause no class of society exhibited a sign; while the bearing of all in their intercourse with the English was as hostile as ever. Markets were indeed established, and, on the approach of harvest, grain was sold at a price less exorbitantly dear than might have been demanded for it. But to stray to any distance beyond the precincts of the camp was never safe, and in more than one instance proved fatal to the parties indulging in it. Two British officers, who had gone to fish the stream, were attacked on their return home, and one of them, Lieut. Inverarity, of the 16th Lancers, was murdered. A party of the 13th light infantry, who had been tempted to drive the animals and cattle too far to graze, were set upon, and several of them wounded; while a body of not fewer than two hundred camp-followers, when endeavouring to make their way back to Hindostan, were betrayed, disarmed, and butchered to a man. In like manner every detachment which made its way from the rear, every convoy of treasure, ammunition, and stores, was compelled to fight its way through the passes, and suffered much loss, both in life and in baggage. Nor was this all; the health of the troops began to give way. Days intensely hot, with nights of considerable severity, told upon the constitutions of the men, worn down by a march of many months' continuance, and the hospitals became crowded. The horses and cattle, on the other hand, regained somewhat of their original condition, a circumstance not a little to be rejoiced at, seeing that the prospect of active operations was before them; for Dost Mohammed, nowise overawed by the progress which the English arms were making, continued to breathe defiance; and it was generally

understood that, ere Cabul could fall, a great battle must be fought.

At length, on the 27th of June, the march upon Cabul began. Right in the way stood the fortress of Ghuznee, where two of Dost Mohammed's sons commanded, and which was understood to be occupied by a stout garrison of several thousand men; and as it was determined not to leave such a place in the enemy's hands, men speculated freely concerning the measures that might be necessary to reduce it; for, strange to say, the battering cannon were all parked in Candahar. Cattle to drag them had become scarce, and the inconvenience experienced in the progress from Shikarpore upwards was painfully fresh in the minds of the authorities. Wherefore trusting that neither at Ghuznee nor anywhere else the Afghans would run the hazards of a siege, the army, leaving its train behind, set out in three continuous columns to open the new campaign.

Few events worth recording befel while as yet the route lay through the territory of Candahar. No sooner, however, was the frontier passed, and the invaders introduced into the territories of the Ghilzies, than they were taught in various ways that they had a different race of persons to deal with; and that in all probability the opportunity which they sought would be afforded, of striking a great blow at an enemy not wholly worthless. The Ghilzies, as is well known, compose both a numerous and a warlike tribe. Their chiefs inhabit towers or castles that lie scattered in great numbers through the valleys, while the hills which overlook them abound with glens and deep recesses, whence sudden outbursts might easily be made on a line of march conducted otherwise than cautiously. There was no lack of caution, however, on the part of the invaders. Advanced guards and flank patrols did their duty well, and the rear was closed and covered judiciously; and as the marches were short, scarcely exceeding ten miles a day, both men and horses came in at the termination of each fresh and cool. Moreover, except by showing here and there a body of horse in their front or on their flanks, the enemy offered no semblance of opposition. Rumour was indeed busy, and from time to time the word was passed to be on the alert, because danger threatened. But none came, and the very road improving, and the country exhibiting increased

signs of cultivation as they proceeded, the march of our people to the vicinity of Ghuznee resembled more a triumphal procession than the progress of invaders through a hostile territory.

It does not come within the scope of the present narrative to describe in detail how Ghuznee was invested, or by what process it fell. The tale has been told many times already; and though we cannot deny to the soldiers who accomplished the feat all praise for their heroism, it is impossible to hide from ourselves the truth, that success in that enterprise was mainly attributable to a combination of fortunate accidents. Had the enemy suspected our purpose of blowing open the gate of the citadel, there would have been no difficulty in rendering the operation impracticable. Had they offered a more determined and better organised resistance to the storming party, it seems incredible that such a place could have been taken by assault. Moreover, all things combined to favour the assailants; and on the morning of the 28th of June Sir John Keane found himself master of a city which the Afghans and other nations of Central Asia regarded as impregnable. It was well for the reputation of the general and the safety of the army that the desperate throw proved successful, for there was not a gun within reach wherewith to batter; and long ere the train could be brought up from Candahar, the failure of supplies must have occasioned the dissolution of a force on which, by open attack, all the armed men in the province could have made no impression.

The booty found in Ghuznee was great: but perhaps the most valuable portion of it came into the hands of the commissariat in the shape of horses, and other beasts of burthen.

The cavalry and artillery, which had become well nigh inefficient, received, in consequence, a considerable remount; and the commissariat, as well as individuals, experienced much relief in the supply of fresh baggage animals, which they were thus enabled to purchase. Neither was it a circumstance without value, that a brother of Dost Mohammed fell, as a prisoner, into the hands of the victors. But the moral effect upon the minds of the surrounding chiefs, no language can sufficiently describe. From the moment that tidings of the event reached them, they seem to have given up the cause of the Dost as hopeless. One after another, as the column moved onwards, they hastened to offer their sub-

mission, till at last Shah Shujah seemed to have solid ground for boasting that he had not deceived his allies in the statement which he made touching the enthusiasm with which his subjects would welcome him back to his throne.

Ghuznee fell on the morning of the 23rd of July. On that day and the following the wounded were gathered together, and bestowed in hospitals; and on the 25th, after clearing the streets of upwards of one thousand dead bodies, a sale by auction took place of the residue of such horses and camels as remained, after the cavalry and artillery had been supplied. In the course of the three succeeding days, something like order was restored to the place, and, two regiments of native infantry having been appointed to hold it, the rest of the army prepared to march upon Cabul. There had been much talk of Dost Mohammed's determination to risk a general action in defence of the capital; but when the hour of trial came, it was found that his people would not support him. Accordingly the invaders moved on in good order and cautiously, but opposed by no obstacles more formidable than those which bad roads and a wild country threw in their way.

Dost Mohammed took up a position so as to cover Cabul, and brought into it the whole of his field artillery—twenty-two pieces. These he felt himself obliged to abandon, because his troops melted away from him ere a blow was struck, and they were all, on the 3rd of August, taken possession of by the British army. Meanwhile the Dost's remaining brothers, one by one, deserted him. Other chiefs, likewise, with their followers, crowded to offer obeisance to the rising sun: and the purposes of the invasion seemed about to receive their accomplishment. But the Dost himself still kept the field; and so long as he should remain at liberty, the throne of Shah Shujah would never be secure. Accordingly, information having been received that, at the head of about three thousand men, he had commenced a retreat towards the Hindoo Cush, orders were issued to pursue. But either because the leader in the pursuit, —an Afghan renegade—betrayed his trust, or that the start of the fugitive was too great, or the country to be traversed too difficult, the Dost was not overtaken. He managed, with his son Akbar Khan, to penetrate into the recesses of the mountains,

and so to baffle, for a while, all the efforts of his enemies to circumvent him.

Meanwhile the army continued to advance, the Bengal column leading; while, from the side of the Punjaub, a large subsidiary force of mercenaries and Seikhs, under the command of Colonel Wade, pressed forward. This latter corps, which had been left at Ferozepore, when Sir Willoughby Cotton conducted the movement of the army of the Indus down the course of the river, had subsequently approached the Khyberry passes, through which, not unopposed by Dost Mohammed's favourite son, it made its way. At first, the obstacles presented to Colonel Wade were very formidable. Not only is the country difficult in a military point of view, but Akbar Khan, having his head-quarters at Jellalabad, was at the summits of the ravines, ready with the *élite* of his father's infantry, and with the whole of his guns, to overwhelm the invaders as soon as they should become entangled amid their ascent of the Khyber. The rapid progress of the army of the Indus, however, so alarmed the Dost, that he called his son and his artillery to the position which he had selected for the defence of Cabul, and the Khyberries being thus abandoned, except by straggling parties of marauders, Colonel Wade forced his way through them with little opposition. The consequence was, that as the main body approached Cabul from one side, Wade and his motley band drew towards it from another, and thus the whole escorted Shah Shujah with triumph to his palace in the Balla Hissar.

Thus far the plans of the Indian government seemed to be executed, and the most extravagant wishes of the promoters of the expedition fulfilled. Dost Mohammed was a fugitive; and Shujah-ool-Mulk sat on the throne of his ancestors. Of Russian intrigues and Persian encroachments mention had ceased to be made. Cabul and the fertile district around it appeared to be well pleased with the change of dynasty; and as the Shah's native army had swelled to a larger amount than either he or the chiefs of his allies appear at one time to have counted upon, the number of British troops which it might be judicious to leave in support of the new order of things, came at once under consideration. Some there were who conceived, that two brigades—one in Eastern, the other in

Western Afghanistan—would suffice to give to the Shah as much confidence as, from the presence of a foreign force, he could require. It was, however, only at the beginning of Dost Mohammed's flight, when his fortunes were supposed to be prostrated effectually, that this idea suggested itself; for by and by, when that indefatigable man was heard of as gathering round him partisans in independent Tartary, wiser counsels prevailed: and finally the resolution was arrived at, that for some time, at all events, it would be necessary to keep the country in military occupation; and that the whole of the Bengal corps would not prove too numerous to accomplish this object. Accordingly three brigades of infantry, with the 2nd regiment of Bengal Light Cavalry, and artillery in proportion, were told off for service to the westward of the Khyber; and Sir John Keane having made up his mind to return with the residue to the provinces, Major General Sir Willoughby Cotton was put in orders to command the whole.

CHAPTER VI.

Breaking-up of the Army of the Indus—The unquiet State of Afghanistan—Surrender of Dost Mohammed.

It was in the month of September, 1840, that the army of the Indus broke up; a portion of the force returning by the Khyber pass and Peshawur, through the Punjaub, to the Bengal provinces; another portion marching by Quetta, on Sukkur and Upper Sinde. Sir John Keane accompanied the former division in person; the command of the latter devolved upon Sir Thomas Wiltshire, to whom likewise was entrusted the task of punishing the Khan of Khelat for his treachery, and reducing the province of which Khelat is the capital, to subjection. Sir John Keane and his escort performed their journey with little inconvenience, beyond that which the roads and a severe climate occasioned. Sir Thomas Wiltshire fought a gallant action under the walls of Khelat, carried the place by assault, and slew the treacherous Khan; and proceeded thence, commanding the respect of the tribes through whose territories he passed, till he reached the Indus. Meanwhile the troops left to occupy Afghanistan spread themselves among the principal strongholds, and took them in possession: they consisted, in addition to the British regiments, of the Shah's contingent, thirteen thousand strong, and of a corps of Seikhs, of which the aggregate amount may be taken at three thousand five hundred. We shall not, therefore, much overrate the strength of the army by which Shah Shujah was supported, if we put down its total amount at twenty thousand men. Unfortunately, however, little or no dependence could be placed upon the Asiatic levies. Though armed and paid by the British government, they had been gathered in from so many different sources that the principle of cohesion had no existence among them, and all, it was to be feared, looked with equal distaste and abhorrence on the presence of the Feringhees, or infidel Europeans, among them. The die,

however, was cast, and the throw was described by such as had the largest stake in the game to be favourable. So the Supreme Government of India rejoiced in the re-establishment of the Doorannee empire, and took such measures as appeared necessary to consolidate and support this creature of its own formation.

The original distribution of the British army was settled as follows: H. M. 13th Light Infantry, and the 35th Native Infantry, with six field-pieces, besides the citadel-guns, were to garrison Cabul. They were to be supported by a regiment of the Shah's cavalry, and some of his artillery; and the whole were to be under the orders of Lieutenant-Colonel Dennie. The 4th brigade, including the 48th Native Infantry, the 2nd Light Cavalry, with a rassalah of Skinner's irregular horse, were to occupy, with six guns, cantonments at Jellalabad. Ghuznee was to be held by the 16th Native Infantry, a rassalah of Skinner's horse, and such details of the Shah's contingent as might be made available. The 42nd and 43rd Native Infantry were to be stationed, with some of the Shah's troops, and the heavy train, at Candahar, and Khelat-i-Ghilzie was likewise occupied. Thus the total number of British regiments left in Afghanistan to act in co-operation with the Shah's troops were one European regiment, the 13th, seven of Native Infantry, one of Native cavalry, with artillery. Of the exact strength of these it would not be easy to speak; but the total amount of armed men, natives and foreigners included, could not fall short, as we have just said, of twenty thousand, while of cannon there were, in camp and in store, between seventy and eighty pieces.

It formed a remarkable feature in the manner of adjusting these affairs, that not only was the King of Cabul supported on his throne by British bayonets, but that there resided within his dominions and about his court, a whole army of British political agents. It seemed, indeed, as if the British government had not only distrusted his Majesty's military strength, but reposed no confidence whatever in his sagacity or political firmness. Moreover, one of the great principles of the English constitution, the subserviency of the military to the civil power, was applied to a case for which it was altogether unsuited. In a country inhabited by a rude people, who, if not positively hostile

to the existing government, at least entertained for it no respect, where the evil to be guarded against was a military insurrection, and peace and order could be maintained only by the sword, all authority over the troops, both in regard to the choice of their positions and the manner of using them, was vested in civilians. Now, however politic this distribution of authority may be in a country where law is respected, and men know their proper relations to each other, a moment's thought must convince the least reflecting, that in Afghanistan it was wholly out of place. And it was the more likely to lead to confusion, that, out of these gentlemen in civil employment, almost all were military officers of a subordinate rank, in whom vanity and a mistaken confidence in their own supposed acquaintance with the science and art of war was pretty sure, sooner or later, to operate disadvantageously. The ablest member of the diplomatic body, Sir Alexander Burnes, early protested against the arrangement, and foretold the results to which it would lead. Neither in this, however, nor in other points hardly less important, were his opinions treated as they deserved; and the results will be remembered with sorrow and with shame as long as history shall survive to speak of them.

Had there been any fitness in Shah Shujah for the position to which he was raised, or any disposition among his subjects to conform to the usages of a settled government, the season of the year at which he began to reign would have offered great facilities for the consolidation of his power. The Afghan tribes, though hardy and enterprising, seldom undertake expeditions, predatory or otherwise, during the winter months. The climate is severe, and good roads being scarce in the country, which presents few features besides a succession of mountain-ranges, it is very difficult for either man or beast, amid deep snow, to accomplish long journeys. Hence Kaffelas or caravans never come or go during these months; and the collectors of the royal revenues, if they have not done their work already, must wait till the next autumn ere they set about it. There is, therefore, rest in all quarters—compulsory, no doubt, but so far favourable to the introduction of a good system of rule, that the minds of men are not pre-occupied; and they have leisure, if the inclination be present with them, to consider the tendency of the proceedings

of those set over them. Of Shah Shujah, however, it seems now to be universally admitted that he possessed no natural talents for command, nor any docility of temper which might have been worked upon for good. He called to his councils men obnoxious to the chiefs of tribes; he affected a degree of state which not the chiefs only, but their followers, abhorred; he went about and stayed at home surrounded by a body-guard of Seikhs, Hindostanees, and strangers. No one was permitted to approach him except with prostrations, and he displayed much rapacity in the collection of his revenues. On the other hand, the people fretted over the sense of defeat, and were outraged by the prospect of a tyranny. The fear of British strength which had at first overwhelmed them, soon gave way to impatience of a British yoke; and plots began almost immediately to be hatched, and a hostile disposition manifested. It was the conviction of these truths, forced upon him sorely against his will, which induced Sir William Macnaghten, the resident at Shah Shujah's court, to apply for a larger amount of British troops than had originally been allotted for the occupation of Afghanistan; and Major-General Sir Willoughby Cotton, after completing his preparations for a return into the provinces, was forced in consequence to resume the command till an officer of similar rank should be sent to relieve him.

The first measure of the general naturally was to make choice of a military position by which the capital might be overawed in case an evil spirit should arise among its inhabitants, and at the same time be protected against invasion from abroad. Now the situation of Cabul is so peculiar, that, under ordinary circumstances, the course to be pursued in regard to this matter could not be mistaken. There is but one commanding position in or around the city, namely, the Chola, or upper portion of the Balla Hissar. Crowning the highest points of two mountain-ranges, at the base of which the town is built, this pile, half-palace, half-citadel, not only overlooks and commands the tops of the houses below, but is in itself of extent enough to afford accommodation to three or four thousand men, with as much ordnance, stores, ammunition, and provisions as would be necessary for a year's consumption. Moreover, such is the straggling nature of the place, that the presence even of a strong garrison

would not of necessity interfere with any amount of room which the court while resident might require. For the upper fort, or Chola Hissar, is quite distinct from the palace: it had been used from time immemorial both as a place of strength and as a state prison, and could scarcely be overlooked by the commanders of a British corps so entirely isolated as that of which Sir Willoughby Cotton had assumed the command. Indeed, so obvious were the advantages to be derived from the occupation of the place, that while the army lay encamped on the Seeah Sung, or Black Rock, a hill of inconsiderable altitude on the flank of the city, artificers were set to work, who constructed within the fortress mud barracks, into which, as soon as they were completed, the 13th Light Infantry marched. But the troops had not long taken possession ere the Shah began to complain that he was overlooked, and in an evil hour considerations of a misplaced delicacy were permitted to outweigh the requirements of military prudence. Under these circumstances the 13th were commanded to evacuate the fort, and measures were taken to establish a fortified cantonment in a position, perhaps, of all that could have been selected, the most unsuitable for the purpose.

The Cabul river, taking its rise among the Taujeek hills, flows through an opening in the lower part of the Balla Hissar range, separating the city, with the Balla Hissar, from an extensive suburb, and by and by intersecting the gardens, orchards, and nobles' seats with which the city is everywhere surrounded. Outside this suburb, on the left of the river, the entrenched camp was established, occupying a piece of low swampy ground, which was commanded on all sides by hills. There were forts or towers likewise, so planted that one or more overlooked each of the circular bastions by which the British lines were protected; and the lines themselves, measuring a thousand yards by six hundred, were rendered still less defensible by crowding in upon them the mission residence with its garden and offices innumerable. Moreover, the more to convince the people that by their conquerors they were neither feared nor suspected, the principal magazine or store, both of provisions and ammunition, was not so much as brought within the intrenched camp. On the contrary

an old fort, quite indefensible, and detached from both the cantonment and the Balla Hissar, was filled with stores, on the safety of which the very existence of the army depended; and a hundred sepoys, commanded by a subaltern officer, were considered adequate to protect them. It has been argued, in extenuation of these gross military blunders, that here, and only here, could the road from Kohistan be covered: but surely even this excuse is inadmissible; for a camp which is itself commanded by heights, and overlooked by towers, cannot command anything, and is wholly worthless for the preservation of order in a city, from which it is cut off by a river. For though the Cabul river be bridged, it is at a point on which no sane man would think of acting, namely, in front of a suburb, filled with flat-roofed houses, the fire from which would annihilate in an hour any corps that should venture to face it.

Whatever men's hopes might be of the ultimate establishment of settled government in Afghanistan, they were not slow in receiving proof that, if effected at all, the much-desired end could be brought about only by slow degrees and incessant exertion. Scarcely was the site of the cantonment marked ere hostile movements on every side called away the troops from the labour of fortifying their own position to attack an enemy in his. Between Candahar and Cabul a fierce spirit of disaffection prevailed. There the warlike Ghilzies were up and doing; nor were they quieted, even imperfectly, till after repeated conflicts and considerable loss on both sides. Meanwhile Dost Mohammed, having baffled the pursuit of Major Outram, was heard of in Kohistan, where the inhabitants flocked to his standard. It was considered necessary to act offensively against him, and for this purpose a thousand Afghan horse, with six hundred infantry, marched upon Bameean: there they halted till the beginning of October, when a brigade of native infantry, with cavalry and guns, joined them. A smart action followed at a place called Syghen, a village thirty miles in advance of Bameean, on the road to Independent Tartary. It ended in the defeat of the Dost's adherents, and led to his retreat into Bokhara, where it was in due time ascertained that foul treason had been enacted towards him. He was seized by the king, and

cast into prison; and as the idea of his escape seems nowhere to have been entertained, the Shah Shujah and his allies gathered up their courage again, and felt themselves secure.

It was an old custom with the kings of Cabul to spend the winter months at Jellalabad; which, lying full three thousand feet nearer than the capital to the level of the sea, enjoys a milder and more genial climate. To play the monarch was Shah Shujah's passion; and he accordingly set out, as soon as the weather began to grow severe, for the winter residence of his forefathers. There he resided till April, 1841; neglecting business, giving himself to state and parade, and receiving no other proof of the spirit of obedience among his subjects than their reluctant payment of an inadequate revenue which foreign troops wrung out of them.

Meanwhile fresh grounds of anxiety and fresh causes of exertion were continually presenting themselves. The family of Dost Mohammed, consisting of two hundred and forty-nine persons, had, on the imprisonment of the Dost in Bokhara, given themselves up to the British government. They were stationed at Ghuznee as a place of safety, till it should be found convenient to escort them to Hindostan; and the fact of their being there may have probably gone some way to confirm Shah Shujah in a belief that from his rival no more hostile attempts were to be apprehended should he succeed, which nobody anticipated, in achieving his liberty. Dost Mohammed, however, by a finesse, which need not here be detailed at length, did manage to escape. He reached the castle of the Walla of Kholoom after encountering many hazards, and was well received by that chief, who dreaded the advance of a British force into his dominions, and who had already contributed by his remonstrances, and eventually by a not unsuccessful war, in softening the rancour of the king of Bokhara towards his captive.

Great was the sensation produced throughout Afghanistan when tidings of these events spread abroad. Akbar Khan, by far the ablest of the Dost's sons, was still at large. He had rejected all the offers of the British minister, preferring a life of rude independence among the mountains to the home of an exile in Loodianah, no matter how highly pensioned: and having struck more than one independent blow, he now hastened, with

his followers, to join his father's standard. Immediately in all the districts between Turkistan and Cabul the royal functions were by Dost Mohammed resumed; and a holy war—a war of extermination against the Kaffirs—was proclaimed.

Information of the Dost's escape from Bokhara reached the envoy and minister on the 17th of July, 1840. On the 6th of August it was reported that disturbances had broken out on the Bameean frontier. On the 7th intelligence arrived that the Beloochees had risen in force, and repossessed themselves of Khelat. By and by tidings of hostile movements from Heraut upon Candaharwere received, which were soon followed by authentic accounts of a defeat of one of the Shah's corps in Bajore, with the loss of a gun. These were distressing rumours; for they clearly indicated that, though the volcano on which the army of occupation sat might be quiet for a time, its fires would never cease to burn internally. Moreover, the Seikhs, or, at all events, that portion of them which occupied Peshawur, and stood between Cabul and the Punjaub, were beginning to exhibit a hostile temper. It would be unjust towards the authorities in Cabul, civil as well as military, to insinuate that they behaved otherwise than with equal courage and address under the circumstances. The Seikh chiefs were narrowly watched. Means of ascertaining the state of public feeling both in the capital and in the districts dependent on it were established; of which, though, when particularized to our western ears, they may sound both harsh and iniquitous, it is impossible to deny that they proved to be effectual. They soon settled the point that Shah Shujah had no party in the country; that everywhere men were ripe for revolt; and that the powerful tribes dwelling in Kohistan waited only for the coming of Dost Mohammed among them, in order to join him with fifty thousand armed men. It was a season for action, and not for deliberation, and, inadequate as the force at his disposal was, Sir Willoughby Cotton seems to have wielded it judiciously.

On the 5th of September it was ascertained that Dost Mohammed was advancing upon Bameean. He had been induced to follow this route rather than that which led to Kohistan, by forged letters sent to him by Sir Alexander Burnes, which represented the Kohistannees as universally hostile to him; for though he found it difficult to reconcile the contents of these

letters with the information which from other quarters he had received, he did not consider that it would be prudent to discredit them. All his movements were made, however, under a veil of impenetrable secrecy. Though large sums were offered for intelligence, little, and that but partially to be depended upon, reached the British head-quarters; and hence the Dost appeared before Syglan so suddenly that the force stationed there judged it expedient to retire. Meanwhile the troops at Bameean were reinforced; and on the 17th of the month slept securely under their tents in profound ignorance that the enemy were encamped within three miles of them. Next day Colonel Dennie saw, to his surprise, at early dawn, the hills that overlooked his position crowned by some hundred Uzbecks; and, putting himself at the head of a detachment, advanced to repulse them. They fell back; and he found himself in the presence of the whole of the Dost's army, numbering several thousand men. There was no hesitation on Dennie's part. He attacked and overthrew the enemy, taking from them tents, baggage, kettle-drums, standards, and the only gun that was left to the Dost, who forthwith fled, his ally, the Wallee of Kholoom, deserting him, and threaded his way towards Ghoree, whence, through one or other of the defiles of the Ghordabund range, he resolved, as a last chance, to penetrate into Kohistan.

While these things were going on, a second expedition had been fitted out at Cabul, and sent, under the command of Sir Robert Sale, to perform services as important, and not less trying, to the westward. It consisted of Her Majesty's 13th Light Infantry, not quite four hundred strong; of two companies, 27th, and as many of the 37th Native Infantry; of two squadrons 2nd Bengal Light Cavalry, a couple of six-pounders, and a nine-pounder gun; to which by and by was added a regiment of the Shah's horse, numbered as the second. Sir Alexander Burnes, in the capacity of political agent, accompanied Sir Robert Sale; and on the morning of the 23rd of September they quitted Cabul. Their first day's march carried them to a place called Khijah-nowash, on the road to Askrai. From thence they proceeded leisurely, disguising their object as much as possible, by Jerbon and Karrabagh, to Robat; thus threatening, so to speak, the whole of the many defiles which, at short intervals from one

another, intersect the Ghordabund. But one of their purposes being to reduce certain refractory chiefs, who occupied a number of forts in and about Tootandurrah, they here made ready to strike the blow. That the rebels should have permitted them to ascend so far into the mountains without risking an action is marvellous. The road which they traversed led sometimes along the base, sometimes through narrow valleys between hills, which rising, in sharp cones, to the region of perpetual snow, were clothed to half their ascent with wood; and many a spot presented itself where a handful of resolute men might have kept their own against an army. Except, however, by occasional long shots, and here and there an attempt upon the baggage, the mountaineers offered no interruption to their progress, and left them to enjoy two days of unbroken rest in the camp at Karabaugh.

The town, or rather village, of Tootandurrah, stands at the entrance of what is called the Ghordabund pass. It occupies the uneven ground whence the steeps that close in the pass like a wall spring up; and besides being surrounded by garden-walls, is defended by a fort, and has several detached towers near it. A chain of these fortalices, each within musket-shot of the other, and of the village respectively, stretches away towards the east. One fort is particularly strong, and the rear, or northern front of the whole position, is covered by a deep canal; while beyond is a valley entirely covered with gardens. It was to the assault of this formidable post that, a little before daybreak, on the 29th, the column set forward, a stout advanced guard being pushed on a-head, and flankers, where the nature of the country would admit, thrown out.

As the troops drew towards the scene of action, it was ascertained that the enemy had made very judicious preparations to receive them. A strong party was drawn up under cover of some broken ground, so as to block the road; a second party covered the hills to the west; the forts and towers were all filled with matchlock men; and the whole, as soon as our people arrived within range, opened their fire. In a moment the column broke into separate bodies; one of which, accompanied by the artillery, cleared the hills, while another turned the flank of the force which protected the village, and, driving all before them, penetrated into two of the detached forts. A rush was now made

upon the village by the principal column, which entered in at the double, and almost as quickly as the men could approach each of them tower after tower was taken. The rebels were defeated with great loss, while on the side of the assailants only one officer and six private soldiers fell.

Having accomplished this service, and, at the suggestion of the political agent, levelled the towers and forts with the ground, Sir Robert Sale halted a couple of days to refresh and look about him. He learned that at Julgah, a strong fortress considerably lower down towards the plain, a refractory chief had established himself, and he determined to strike at him, as he had done at Tootandurrah. With this view, he moved on the 1st of October to Churikar, where a reinforcement of the Shah's cavalry joined him, and, pitching his tents, gave out that on the morrow the homeward march would be prosecuted. Meanwhile the Shah's cavalry, the janbazees, and five hundred Doorannee horse, making in all about a thousand cavalry, were ordered to march out at midnight, and to proceed to Julgah, sixteen miles off, so that the place might be invested before dawn. The cavalry thus far performed the part that was assigned them faithfully; and the infantry and guns following at an early hour in the morning, the rebel chief was shut up in his castle. About noon, on the 3rd, one twenty-four pound howitzer, three nines, and two sixes, were got into position. They forthwith opened their fire, and for three hours and a half maintained it with equal alacrity and precision. But the materials of which the fort was built would not admit of breaching. Heaps of soil peeled off, it is true, and, as far as external appearance could be trusted, filled the ditches; but behind these ruins a thick rampart still showed itself, in which the balls lodged without in any degree shaking it. Under these circumstances it was determined to try the effect of an escalade; and two separate storming parties, each opposite what was called its own breach, were formed.

There were no scaling-ladders with Sale's corps, neither had he timber at his command for making them; but out of the dooly poles—that is, the poles of the sort of litters on which sick and wounded men are carried—his artificers soon constructed very respectable substitutes for them. Supplied with these, the companies of the 13th, which had been told off for the service, sprang

forward; and, through a murderous shower of matchlock bullets, gained the crest of the glacis. To spring into the ditch and erect the ladders was the work of a moment; but, alas! the ladders proved too short: they sank into the soft débris on which it was necessary to plant them; and did not, by a considerable space, reach the top of the wall. In vain the gallant fellows sprang up. They were unable to reach or to touch the coping of the rampart with their hands, and being fired at from loopholes and windows, behind which their enemies stood comparatively secure, they dropped one after another. It would have been sheer murder to continue this contest, so the bugle sounded a retreat. But while the forlorn hope was retiring, several officers entreated Sir Robert Sale that he would permit them to try again at a point where the wall seemed less lofty, and he assented. Away they went, followed by their brave men, and again the ladders were tried, and found insufficient. Four officers only managed to crown the wall: not a man could follow; and these, after maintaining their insecure footing till the bugle had repeatedly recalled them, were forced to withdraw. It would be an act of injustice towards the brave, were the names of these gallant youths omitted from the present narrative. Brevet Major Kershaw, Lieutenant and Adjutant Wood, Lieutenant Edward King, and Lieutenant G. Wade, performed this feat; and two, Lieutenant G. Wade and Lieutenant, now Captain, Wood, survive to wear the laurels that they won. The other two died as soldiers should: Major Kershaw in the disastrous retreat from Cabul; Lieutenant King, as shall hereafter be described, at the fight of Tezeen.

Mortified, but nowise disheartened by the result of this endeavour, Sir Robert Sale encamped for the night in a ravine, after directing the cavalry to maintain a strict blockade of the place, which he was determined to attack with shells and a renewed cannonade on the morrow. Unfortunately, however, the bad spirit which pervaded other classes of society was busy by this time among the Shah's troops; and the janbazees, instead of hemming the rebels in, sent, as soon as it was dark, to inform the chief that he might pass through their lines, if so disposed. The chief, wondering at his past success, and not venturing to anticipate a repetition of it, gladly closed with the proposal; and the

consequence was, that when on the morrow preparations for opening the batteries were in progress, the fort was discovered to be empty. Sale immediately took possession; and, like the towers about Tootandurrah, Julgah was rased to the ground.

The casualties altogether in Sale's brigade amounted to not fewer than fifty; and it was ascertained that the total amount of the force which had been opposed to them did not exceed this number. Nevertheless, no discredit attaches to soldiers whom walls neither to be broken through nor surmounted repulse. Moreover, the *éclat* of victory was so far theirs that they won the enemy's stronghold and destroyed it; after which, on the morning of the 6th, they again shifted their ground: for to Sale two objects, each distinct in itself, though both equally important, had been entrusted. He was directed not only to punish the refractory chiefs in the valleys of Ghordabund, but to watch and head back Dost Mohammed, who since his overthrow at Bameean was understood to be seeking some other route by which to penetrate into the Nijrow Valley, or to strike a blow at Cabul itself. Accordingly the column marched backwards and forwards; halting now here, now there, according as the spies informed them that the Dost was near at hand or far away; till at last, after a fruitless effort to come upon him with a body of horse, the whole, infantry, cavalry, and artillery, took up a position at Korabagh, on the road to the capital.

If Sale's brigade manœuvred skilfully, and endured, without repining, much fatigue and many privations, the movements of Dost Mohammed were to the full as remarkable. He threaded defiles, descended passes, only to scale them again; hovered on the outskirts of various places, and approached near enough to the British camp to put its inmates on the alert for a battle. Moreover, having the whole district in his favour, the Dost was enabled to baffle every attempt at surprise, and was not without his adherents among the followers of the Shah's standard. On one occasion a whole company of Kohistanees deserted to him, and serious apprehensions were entertained lest the remainder should follow the example. Nevertheless Sale relaxed in his exertions not for a moment. On the 17th of October arrangements were made for surprising the castle of Dervish Khan, one of the steadiest and most respectable of the friends of the

ex-ruler; but after a long detour, for the purpose of concealing the object of the movement, the castle was found to have been abandoned, and the troops halted at a place called Babookooshgur. Here, on the night of the 18th, a desultory fire was opened upon the tents; but it did no damage, and long before dawn the enemy, who had approached within one hundred and fifty yards of the sentries, retired.

The 19th brought up from Cabul the remaining eight companies of the 37th Native Infantry, with three additional nine-pounders. Thus strengthened, Sir Robert Sale determined to attack Kurdurrah, a village strongly placed under cover of the lower range of the Lughman mountains, where about a thousand insurgents were stated to have assembled, with a determination to keep their ground to the last man. And, indeed, had there been among them the same amount of daring as of subtlety, it seems hard to imagine how the post could have been won, except at a sacrifice of life almost too great for the purchase. In addition to the defences of Nature's formation on ground abrupt and broken, overhung by ravines innumerable, there ran between the villages of Kurdurrah and Brydack two miles of gardens and vineyards, the whole of which occupied terraces on the sides of the mountains, and were defensible to an extent which is to be understood only after ocular inspection; and, as a matter of course, each garden and vineyard had its tower or fortalice overlooking it. But the occupants of that strong ground were wanting in confidence one towards the other. The soldiers distrusted the peaceable inhabitants; the peaceable inhabitants looked with disfavour on the soldiers; and the consequence was, that during the night of the 20th the position was entirely abandoned: wherefore Sir Robert Sale, after burning the villages, levelling the towers, and destroying the gardens, marched back to Arksai, where he again placed himself in observation over Cabul.

It was well known by this time that Dost Mohammed had penetrated into the Nijrow Valley, and that the little band with which he arrived there was receiving daily accessions to its strength. Under these circumstances Sir Willoughby Cotton detached a force from Cabul, which, pushing by a forced march upon Istalif, took possession of it; while Sale, having remained stationary about a week, broke up once more, and manœuvred

to strike at the Dost wherever he might find him. He proceeded first to Julgah, and thence upwards to Bigh-i-alum, sending his tents before him, as if his purpose had been to proceed somewhere by the route of Tootandurrah. But no sooner was he put in possession of accurate intelligence regarding the Dost's proceedings than he suddenly changed the line of his march, and passed on towards Prurwan Durrah. He traversed on this occasion a valley through which ran two rapid streams, both of them fordable, yet offering some impediments to the march of artillery; but his knowledge that the enemy was near, and that all the people round about viewed him with disfavour, compelled him to make his approaches carefully. On the 2d of November his advanced guard consisted of two six-pounder guns, two companies of the 13th Light Infantry, two flank companies of the 37th, and one of the 27th Native Infantry, two squadrons of the 2d Bengal Light Cavalry, and two hundred of the Shah's 2d horse. Lieutenant Colonel Salter commanded the whole; and for a while, in spite of the difficulties of the road, its progress was as steady as could have been desired. Doubtless here and there a fort fired upon the men, but there seemed little disposition among the inhabitants of the villages to swell the number of the Dost's followers, for they flocked in by the score, intreating protection against the invader, whom they described as plundering without mercy wherever he went. At last, from various tokens that presented themselves, it was judged that the Dost, with his corps, could not be far distant. The country people described the latter as 3500 strong; and held out hopes, that if a body of cavalry were pushed on by a route which they described, the retreat of the whole might be cut off. This idea, which Dr. Lord strongly confirmed, was acted upon without delay, and two squadrons of the 2d Bengal Cavalry were directed to skirt the hill on the right, while the left of the pass should be occupied by the Shah's horse. It is not necessary to describe in detail the mortifying results that followed. The 2d Bengal Cavalry, being threatened by about two hundred of Dost Mohammed's horse, turned and fled, leaving their officers to be cut to pieces; while the infantry, though they presented as usual a steady front, could not stop the enemy from effecting their retreat in good order. But the Dost went not with them. He had borne himself gallantly in the

charge of horse. He had recovered marvellously from his defeat at Bameean, and could boast of as large a following as attended him previously. But he felt that for the present his game was played out. Accordingly, while his people marched back towards the Nijrow Valley, he stole away from them, with a single attendant in his train; and, taking a circuitous route, so as to avoid Sir Robert Sale's camp, pushed for Cabul.

On the evening of the 3d, the day succeeding the skirmish, Sir William Macnaghten was returning from a ride into the country, and had approached within fifty yards of the city gate. A horseman suddenly passed his escort, and pulling up his weary steed beside that of the envoy, announced that he was Dost Mohammed. Of all that followed it is unnecessary to speak. Dost Mohammed was graciously received and treated with much kindness. He was restored to his family, or, to speak more accurately, his family was restored to him; and the whole, being put under the charge of a sufficient escort, proceeded by Jelalabad, and through the Khyber Pass into the Punjaub, and thence to the place of residence which had been allotted to them within the Company's territory.

CHAPTER VII.

Peaceful Occupation of Cabul and the Posts adjacent.

So passed in this direction the summer and autumn of 1840. Elsewhere, likewise, success had attended all the operations of British officers; for Khelat was recovered, the Ghilzies were put down, the Beloochees reduced to an unwilling obedience, and the Seikhs of Peshawur overawed. Accordingly, at the approach of winter, Shah Shujah and his court retired, as they had done the previous year, to Jellalabad, where Sir Willoughby Cotton bore them company. Neither did aught befal between November, 1840, and the early summer of 1841 to excite serious alarm, or much suspicion anywhere. Kept down, partly by the climate, partly by the respect which they entertained for British prowess, the heads of the tribes lying to the north of Ghuznee remained tranquil; and as Candahar, with the provinces dependent on it, was held by General Nott and a competent force, the occasional predatory risings of the people between Ghuznee and that place were not much regarded. In one district, and only in one, a different spirit prevailed. The Nijrow chiefs not only continued to hold aloof from offering any sign of submission to the new order of things, but granted an asylum to all the restless spirits from other places whom discontent or the fear of punishment for crimes already committed induced to abandon their homes. It is well known that the condition of that district was neither concealed from Sir William Macnaghten, nor by him overlooked. On the contrary, he repeatedly urged upon the Indian government the necessity of reinforcing the army of occupation, so that Nijrow, as well as other suspected provinces, might be adequately garrisoned. But considerations of economy would seem to have weighed more at Calcutta than the representations of the envoy, for no troops were sent, and out of this neglect competent authorities have not hesitated to affirm that

the disasters which subsequently befel the army of occupation principally arose.

The time at length arrived when it was judged expedient to relieve a portion of the force now on duty across the Indus, and to fill up the ranks of the regiments still kept there, with drafts from their depôts. In pursuance of this policy, the 44th Queen's regiment, under the command of Colonel Shelton, quitted the provinces; and being on its march to Jellalabad, passed the remains of the 1st Bengal European corps, which was escorting Dost Mohammed and his family to Loodianah. By and by a fresh convoy arrived, bringing with it Major-General Elphinstone, to whom Sir Willoughby Cotton had already made the necessary arrangements for giving over the command. The two generals seem to have passed one another on the road. The one returned, covered with honours, to Hindostan, the other proceeded, in bad health, and in not much better spirits, to take upon himself a charge for which he was neither morally nor physically fitted. Poor Elphinstone came at an unlucky moment. Already was the temper of the people beginning to exhibit itself so uncomfortably, that Colonel Shelton found himself obliged to diverge from his proper line of march, in order to punish a refractory tribe in the Nazean valley. The expedition proved successful, for not fewer than eighty forts or castles were demolished; yet it has never quite appeared of what particular crime the malcontents had been guilty, or whether the head and front of their offending might not be a refusal to pay tribute such as had, at no previous period, been exacted of them. Colonel Shelton and the 44th did, however, their duty; neither were they less energetic a little later in the season, when the hostile attitude of the Seikhs, let loose from the restraint which Runjeet Singh used to impose upon them, called for a demonstration from Jellalabad through the Khyber towards Peshawur. But there was no fighting on that occasion. Captain Broadfoot, with his convoy, scarcely a thousand strong, put on so bold an attitude, and maintained it with such steadiness, that the Seikh marauders feared to risk a struggle, and suffered them to pass. The whole, therefore,—these fresh arrivals and Colonel Shelton's brigade together,—proceeded onwards without let or loss to Cabul.

Never had Afghanistan, or at least that portion of it which lies

to the north-east of Ghuznee, appeared to enjoy more profound tranquillity than at this time. Cabul Proper, Jellalabad, Kohistan itself, and the districts adjacent to each of them gave, or seemed to give, willing obedience to the government. Candahar, likewise, with the whole extent of territory, from the desert to the Helmund, if not pacified, was quiet; while the tribes in possession of the passes, particularly the Ghilzies and the Khyberries, were at once mollified and rendered happy by the receipt of a sort of black-mail, which, to the amount of 8000*l.* a year, the British government paid to them as the price of protection to its communications. Nobody therefore dreamed of danger, or would have credited the report had it been made to him, that in any of these quarters the spirit of intrigue and deadly hatred was busy, yet the spirit of discontent was very busy throughout the whole compass of the Doorannee empire; and Cabul itself had already been the scene of plots and conspiracies without end. Moreover, so early as the month of May, Major Pottinger, who had been appointed political agent in Kohistan, reported to the envoy that all was was not well in the province. He requested that more troops might be sent, and proved to demonstration that a single regiment consisting of natives of the place, with three six-pounder guns, could not, even if the infantry were to be depended upon, put down an insurrection. But Major Pottinger was regarded as an alarmist, whose representations ought to go for nothing; so that the clouds were permitted to gather and thicken from day to day, till the storm burst which swept the whole might of the British army, and for a season, the prestige of the British name alike before it.

It will be borne in mind that, as far as British influence extended, the newly erected Doorannee empire was divided at this time into two military commands. One of these, having its head-quarters in the capital, embraced the provinces which may be said to be based upon the parallel of the Suffaid Koh, towards the south. Its great towns were Cabul, Ghuznee, and Jellalabad. Its territory comprehended the several provinces that lie south of the Hindoo Cush, north of the lower roots of the Suffaid Koh, and east of the Helmund as far as Peshawur. Two European regiments of infantry, Her Majesty's 13th and 44th; four of Native infantry, the 27th, 35th, 37th, and 54th

of Bengal; four squadrons of regular Native cavalry; two troops of horse artillery; one nine-pounder battery, under Captain Abbott;—these, together with swarms of the Shah's forces, horse and foot, constituted the garrison by which it was held. And at the head of the whole was Major-General Elphinstone, so far at least as an officer, who is required never to act except on the suggestions of an envoy, or political agent, or civil chief by whatsoever title designated, can be said to command an army at all.

The other military district, lying to the south and west of the Suffaid Koh, was far more extensive, and therefore required, and had allotted, for its protection, a more numerous army. Its towns were Candahar, Quetta, Khelat, Dadur, Gundava, and the small but important post of Ghiresk, upon the Helmund. Here General Nott commanded, having his head-quarters at Candahar, with garrisons in Quetta, Kelat-i-Ghilzie, Killa-abdoolah, and Ghiresk. But in process of time, when trouble began to thicken, these detached posts were abandoned, and in the end only Candahar, Quetta, and Kelat-i-Ghilzie, were occupied.

With the proceedings of the army under the command of General Nott it is not the business of the present narrative to interfere. Enough is done when we state, that long before matters had come to a crisis around Cabul, Candahar and the provinces dependent upon it were in a flame. Repeated insurrections took place, and many sharp actions were fought, the whole of which redounded to the honour of the British officers and soldiers, Native as well as European. Moreover, the Shah's revenue, miserably inadequate at the best, could seldom be collected except by British officers at the head of troops; and it rarely happened that these fiscal movements failed of bringing on collisions, always exasperating, and sometimes disastrous. In like manner the chiefs in Kohistan, and indeed everywhere else beyond the limits of a few miles round the capital, could be induced to contribute towards the maintenance of the government only by force. And as the whole of the troops thus employed, whether following the British standard or serving under that of the Shah, were paid and fed at the expense of the Indian treasury, the pressure of the burthen began, ere long, to make

itself felt. At last the supreme government at Calcutta began to complain. Repeated instructions were given to the envoy that he should practise a rigid economy in all departments of the state. It was proposed to diminish the amount of military force by which the throne was maintained; and the question was continually put as to when, in the opinion of the experienced, it was probable that British support might be wholly withdrawn. Sir William Macnaghten seems to have met these instances with temper and moderation, and every desire to fall in with the views of his superiors. He could not recommend that the force which kept the country should be diminished, unless, indeed, the resolution were taken to abandon altogether the policy which had raised Shah Shujah to the throne. But he promised to reduce its expenses to the lowest practicable figure, and began his system of entrenchment at the wrong end. Had he dispensed with the services of three-fourths of the political agents, by whom Afghanistan was absolutely overrun, the saving to the British treasury would have been immense, and the damage done to either government very slight. But this course he did not judge it expedient to pursue; and the consequence was, a step comparatively little worth as regarded the saving to be effected by it, though of incalculable mischief, inasmuch as it fanned into a flame the insurrectionary temper which had long smouldered.

The communications between the most advanced of the British settlements in Hindostan and the capital of the empire of which General Elphinstone was in military possession, were both difficult and insecure. Besides that, the territories of allies not absolutely trustworthy must be crossed,—each convoy as it arrived on the frontier of Afghanistan, whether it came from Peshawur or by the more circuitous route of Sukkur, found itself at the gorge of the first of a series of mountain passes, to traverse which, even when unopposed, was difficult; to force a way through which, in the face of a resolute enemy, must have been, except to an army at once numerous and well disciplined, impossible. Between Peshawur and Cabul lie first the Khyber, next Jugdulluk, then the Tizeen, and finally the Koord Cabul, all of them difficult, and the last long and winding, with a sort of basin or punch-bowl in the midst. On the other side, between the capital and Sukkur, there are all the ravines and difficult

places of which, while tracing with a rapid pen the advance of the army, mention has been made; and of which one of the least intricate proved, when attempted in an hour of danger, absolutely impracticable. Now two methods, and only two, were offered to the envoy of keeping these passes open. They must either be studded with strong military posts, whence not the gorges alone, but the crests of the hills should be commanded (and to accomplish this effectually would require an army); or else the natives must be prevailed upon to do the work themselves. The latter course had been adopted, perhaps wisely; and the Ghilzie chiefs, on consideration of receiving an annual payment among the whole of them of 8000*l.*, agreed to protect the march of convoys, caravans, and small detachments. Up to the autumn of 1841, they fulfilled their part of the treaty with greater exactness than, from the constitution of society in Central Asia, might have been expected. But now it was determined to higgle with them about terms, and instead of 8000*l.*, 4000*l.* were offered. They indignantly rejected the proposal; and from the hour when it was made, entered eagerly into the conspiracies which were everywhere maturing themselves round the devoted general and envoy.

It has already been stated that in the month of May, 1841, Major Pottinger, the political agent in Kohistan, communicated to Sir William Macnaghten his fears for the peace of that province, and urged that the military force allotted for its occupation should be increased. No great heed was paid to this remonstrance; nevertheless, a few native horsemen, with one gun and a small reinforcement of the Shah's artillery, were sent to him; and he was assured that the gentlemen at head-quarters knew better than he how entirely without foundation were the apprehensions which he cherished. Neither must we blame too hastily the temper that led to a confidence which the progress of events showed to have been misplaced. The Shah and his counsellors evinced no signs of distrust. The city was quiet, and so were the towns and villages dependent on it; and the whole of General Elphinstone's command, with the exception of the garrison of Ghuznee and one or two detachments less numerically strong, being concentrated round Cabul, it is hardly to be wondered at if men, accustomed to give the law and to be

obeyed, should have discredited all rumours of a rebellion. Accordingly, time appears to have passed, both with civilians and military officers, pleasantly enough. The climate, though hot, was less oppressive than that of Hindostan. The scenery was attractive and the town full of good things; and it rarely happens that young men with swords at their sides look much beyond the pleasant circumstances by which they may be surrounded. Hence a diary of the proceedings of most of them would present, were it faithfully transcribed, an agreeable picture enough. There was society in the cantonments, for many officers had been joined by their wives and families. There was abundance of delicious fruit, and provisions were plentiful. Excursions to different points remarkable for their natural beauties, or rendered memorable by the associations that were connected with them, gave agreeable occupation both to mind and body. And, to sum up all, it really appeared, judging from the manner of the chiefs and the hospitalities which they seemed willing to dispense, that whatever of antipathy might have existed on either side towards the other when the acquaintance between the two races began, was about to be supplanted by a better feeling. It may not, perhaps, be uninteresting to the reader to be told how his countrymen managed, during both summer and winter, to kill time in the centre of Asia; and the following account, gathered from the journals of officers, may be taken by him as a tolerably accurate detail of their proceedings.

CHAPTER VIII.

Peaceful Occupations at Cabul.

CABUL, as regards its general appearance, has been described; both by pen and pencil, too often and too accurately to warrant a repetition of the picture here. Houses, built chiefly of mud, with flat roofs, and surrounding, as in Spain, open court-yards; streets narrow and by no means remarkable for their cleanliness; bazaars or markets, each appropriated to its own particular use, wherein dealers of every description set forth their wares for sale,—these present in the capital of Afghanistan, as they do in most Oriental cities, the features which first attract the attention of the stranger. There was a wall, of course, carried round the city. Here and there the tower or castle of a chief rose above the ordinary level of the dwellings; and the Balla Hissar, crowning the rock which overlooked the whole, excited the admiration of the traveller, especially when looked at from a distance. But the mosques and other public buildings do not appear to have been very imposing, either for their size or the style of their architecture. In a word, intimacy had the effect in this instance which it is supposed to have in many others, of lowering to a marvellous extent the feeling of respect which a first acquaintance might have excited. Its position on an elevated plain, with tall rocks looking down upon it, and the Indian Caucasus with its summits of eternal snow forming the background to the picture, gave to Cabul, when first seen from afar, a very imposing appearance. It proved, when examined more closely and in detail, to be a mean collection of mean houses, and as filthy as all towns are which continue undrained, and are not provided with any of the conveniences which the habits of civilized men require.

It was in the beginning of August that the soldiers of England made their first acquaintance with this city. The orchards and gardens which surround it on every side were laden with rich

fruit. The Cabul river flowed with a clear and rapid stream, fertilizing the plain and giving an air of gladness to the scenery. Inured to the climate and hardened by exposure, our countrymen seemed to regard the intense heat of the day as a trifle, and enjoyed the cool airs of early morning and the hour that followed sunset intensely. Throughout the whole of the autumn they lived under canvas, the officers passing to and fro with a confidence which, at this early stage of their acquaintance, appeared to command a like degree of honesty among the people. Of course, there was no lack of interesting occupation. Parties rode hither and thither to visit and inspect such objects of curiosity as were described to them. Baba Shah's tomb, of which Mr. Masson and Dr. Atkinson have both given a description; the obelisk, of which tradition ascribes the structure to Alexander the Great; the magnificent scenery about Arkserai, and as far into the mountains as it was deemed prudent to go, offered irresistible attractions to the admirers both of nature and of art. And when curiosity had begun to be appeased, other and not less characteristic modes of disposing of their time were by these light-hearted young men adopted.

Wherever Englishmen go, they sooner or later introduce among the people whom they visit a taste for manly sports. Horse-racing and cricket were both got up in the vicinity of Cabul; and in both the chiefs and the people soon learned to take a lively interest. Shah Shujah himself gave a valuable sword to be run for, which Major Daly, of the 4th Light Dragoons, had the good fortune to win: and so infectious became the habit that several of the native gentry entered their horses, with what success no record seems to have been preserved. The game of cricket was not, however, so congenial to the taste of the Afghans. Being great gamblers in their own way, they looked on with astonishment at the bowling, batting, and fagging out of the English players; but it does not appear that they were ever tempted to lay aside their flowing robes and huge turbans and enter the field as competitors. On the other hand, our countrymen attended them to their mains of cocks, quails, and other fighting animals, and, betting freely, lost or won their rupees in the best possible humour. In like manner our people indulged them from time to time in trials of strength and feats of agility,

on which they much pride themselves: and to their own exceeding delight, though very much to the astonishment of their new friends, they in every instance threw the most noted of the Cabul wrestlers.

The result of this frankness was to create among the Afghans a good deal of personal liking for their conquerors. The chiefs, in consequence, invited them to their houses in town, as well as to share in their field-sports when they retired to their castles in the country; and if the entertainments in the former situation soon grew heavy after the sense of novelty wore away, the latter appear to have been greatly relished to the last. And the accuracy with which the double-barrelled guns of the British officers brought down, right and left, snipes and quails on the wing, astounded those who never fired except at objects that were stationary. But greater marvels still awaited the Afghans.

The winter at Cabul may be said to set in towards the end of October. In 1839, for example, ice was seen in the ditches about this time of an inch or more in thickness; and as November and December advanced, the weather grew continually colder. No words can describe the intense delight with which men, long unaccustomed to the bracing air of a frosty day, hailed this change of climate; and when in January the snow began to fall, it seemed as if all the hues of summer were hideous in comparison with the uniform shining white wherewith the whole face of the country was overspread. Strange to say, however, the Afghans refused to believe that frost and snow were familiar to the senses of the Feringhees. They had marched from the burning plains of Hindostan; and the good people of Cabul, though aware that they were not Hindostanees, could not be persuaded to credit that they were natives of a cold climate. But this piece of incredulity our countrymen got the better of by a process as simple as it was ingenious.

There is a lake about five or six miles from Cabul, in the direction of Istalif, which, though partially saline, or rather metallic, in its waters, is frozen over in all winters if the weather be commonly severe. In the winter of 1839-40 it was covered with a coat of ice more than ordinarily thick, on which the Afghans used to practise the art of sliding, far more skilfully, as well as gracefully, than their European visitors. Indeed,

it was the clumsy manner in which the Feringhees assayed that boyish sport which induced them to reiterate the conviction that heat, and not cold, was the white man's element. Forthwith our young gentlemen set themselves to the fabrication of skates: the artificers soon shaped the wood-work according to models given; out of old iron, smelted, and hardened afterwards, the blades were formed; and in due time a party of skaters, equipped for the exercise, appeared upon the lake. The Afghans stared in mute amazement while the officers were fastening on their skates, but when they rose, dashed across the ice's surface, wheeled and turned, and cut out all manner of figures upon the ice, there was an end at once to disbelief in regard to the place of their nativity. "Now," cried they, "we see that you are not like the infidel Hindoos that follow you: you are men, born and bred like ourselves, where the seasons vary, and in their changes give vigour both to body and mind. We wish that you had come among us as friends, and not as enemies, for you are fine fellows one by one, though as a body we hate you."

Mention has been made of the hospitalities which were dispensed by Afghan chiefs to British officers. The latter were not backward to return the civility. Not only the houses of such men as the envoy, the commander-in-chief, and Sir Alexander Burnes, were thrown open to them, but the mess of the 13th received its frequent guests, most of whom ate and drank with as much good will and indiscrimination as if there had been no prohibitory clauses in the Koran or elsewhere. Among other means adopted to entertain the aristocracy of Central Asia, the British officers got up a play: a theatre was constructed, scenery painted, dresses prepared, and excellent bands in attendance; and as the pieces which they chose were chiefly broad comedies, such as the 'Irish Ambassador' and others of the same sort, great amusement was afforded to the audience. For on such occasions they changed the titles of the *dramatis personæ*, so as to bring them and the offices of the parties bearing them down to the level of the Afghan comprehension; while Burnes and others skilled in the dialect of the country, translated the speeches as they were uttered. The Afghans are a merry people, and have a keen relish of the ludicrous and the satirical; and as the interpreter never failed to bring the jokes of the actors

home to them, they marked their delight by bursting into frequent peals of laughter.

The spring begins to burst at Cabul early in March. It is not, however, genial, for the rains are heavy and incessant till about the middle of May. This is the season for snipe-shooting, which men prosecute in the intervals of the showers, looking for their game by the margin of the lake, and wherever watercourses or marshes intersect the cultivated country; and then, likewise, ducks may be followed to advantage, though they are more sought after when the ice upon the lake is strong; and the sportsman is sure to find them at the springs, which are never frozen. But, as may be supposed, both snipe and duck-shooting are followed only when the strength of the rain is interrupted, as it begins to be towards the latter part of April. Nevertheless, the officers of the British army do not appear to have wasted even the rainy season in absolute inaction. They set themselves to an employment which was exceedingly interesting in itself, and which, when the period of exhibiting its results arrived, proved to be a source of fresh wonder to their Caucasian neighbours.

The 13th Light Infantry could boast in those of a very ingenious individual among its officers. Mr. Sinclair possessed a great mechanical genius, which he now applied to the construction of a boat, which he succeeded in rendering complete in all respects during the interval of the rains. Carriages being provided, it was conveyed, with its oars, masts, and sails, to the lake, and there launched. Now there had never been seen in all Afghanistan before that moment such a thing as a boat of any description. Individual Afghans who might have strayed as far as the Indus could possibly speak on their return of the inflated hides by means of which the dwellers upon the banks of that river waft themselves from point to point; and the flying-bridges, or huge ferry-boats, which here and there cross the stream, must have had a place in their memory. But even to travellers the trim wherry in which a party of young men now embarked was entirely new, and to the multitude it became an object of astonishment indescribable. They could not comprehend the principle on which it had been fabricated. The oars, the masts, the sails, and, above all, the rudder, were marvels

and mysteries to them; and when the crew, after exhibiting before them, endeavoured to explain that England possessed floating castles of the kind, capable of accommodating many hundred persons, and carrying each a hundred guns of heavy calibre, they lifted up their heads and eyes in mute amazement. It is hardly necessary to add, that of the mighty ocean it was impossible to convey to their minds any idea; for he who has not seen the sea never learns, even from books and drawings, how rightly to apprehend it; and to those who had for the first time heard of it, it was mere sound without sense.

So passed the various seasons of the year, each of which brought with it both its pleasures and its anxieties. In winter men wrapped well up, for the thermometer at early morning was often far below zero; and the white snow upon the ground, reflecting back the rays of a sun, which moved through a sky which was almost always cloudless, tried the eyes severely, and sometimes fatally: for it is a remarkable peculiarity in the meteorological phenomena of Afghanistan, that, while the snow is falling, the blue of the heavens overhead continues as clear as ever. In spring, out-of-door amusements were heartily entered into when the rains would permit; after which, so late as the end of June, the climate appears to have been delicious. A clear air, with the thermometer varying from 78° to 86°, left such as breathed it free to go abroad at all hours; and encouraged them, not only to angle, as many did with great success, but to add football, hocky, and quoits to the list of their athletic sports.

Thus far all things went on as could have been desired. The Afghan chiefs professed, and acted, as if they felt something like regard for their European invaders individually; though they never scrupled to tell them frankly, that, as a people, they were abhorred. Moreover, excellent discipline being preserved, there occurred no grounds of collision between the occupants of the camp or the cantonments and the populace. In one respect, however, a regard to historical truth compels us to acknowledge, that less regard was paid to the prejudices of the inhabitants than could have been wished. Though they do not, like other Mohammedan races, universally shut up their women, the Afghans are as open to jealousy as Orientals in general, and treating their

wives often rudely, the latter could not but be pleased with the attentions which the Feringhees showed them. It is much to be feared, that our young countrymen did not always bear in mind that the domestic habits of any people ought to be sacred in the eyes of strangers. And hence arose, by degrees, distrust, alienation, and hostility, for which it were unfair to deny that there might be some cause. However, it is not worth while to touch upon a subject which cannot be approached without seeming to condemn where condemnation could serve no good purpose. Whatever errors they may have committed, the great mass of the garrison of Cabul atoned for them terribly; and the survivors, as years pass over them, will doubtless more and more become convinced, that the gratification of the moment is purchased at too high a price, if it occasion deep or permanent suffering to others.

CHAPTER IX.

March of Sale's Brigade towards the Provinces—Operations at Bootkak.

THE time was now come when the return to the provinces of the regiments which the Queen's 44th and other corps had come up to relieve could no longer be deferred. The hostile movements among the villages of the Zoormut and the Ghoodabund, which had hitherto operated to postpone the arrangement, were put down; and though rumours of the revival of a bad spirit in many quarters were rife, nobody seemed much disposed to regard them. Accordingly, in the beginning of October, 1841, Sir Robert Sale's brigade, consisting of the 13th Light Infantry, increased by drafts recently received to eight hundred bayonets, and the 35th Native Infantry, of pretty nearly the same numerical strength, was warned to be in readiness for the march. Moreover, as the march was to be conducted through provinces supposed to be peaceable, and led in a homeward direction, both corps were informed, through their commanding officers, that nothing more could possibly be exacted from them, than the good conduct which British soldiers usually display when passing from one quarter to another. The men's arms were, for the most part, of an inferior description. Old flint and steel muskets had become, through much use, so imperfect in their hands, that numbers were in the habit of missing fire continually, and the best and most serviceable in the whole brigade was just as likely to carry its ball wide of the mark as in a straight line towards it. Sir Robert Sale, who knew the importance and value of effective weapons, stated these facts at head-quarters. He reminded the authorities that there were in store four thousand muskets, constructed on the detonating principle, perfectly new, and never likely, at least with the present force, to be sullied by using; and he begged permission to arm his regiment from that heap, and to leave his worn-out firelocks in the room of the weapons withdrawn. But General Elphinstone would not listen to

the proposal. What could the 13th want with new muskets, when it was well known that, in marching out of Cabul, they were accomplishing the first stage on their journey to England? They must carry what they had with them, and they did so; of which the consequence was, that when the day of overthrow came, eight hundred serviceable muskets fell into the hands of Akbar Khan, instead of being used against him.

Though nobody seemed to apprehend that serious obstacles to the progress of the brigade would anywhere arise, still, as the means of transport were scanty, and it was found necessary to move the regiments one by one, orders were issued for the attendance upon the leading battalion of a certain amount of troops of other arms than its own. Accordingly Colonel Monteith, who with the 35th Native Infantry moved first from the cantonments, had under his orders, additional to his own corps, one hundred men of the Shah's sappers and miners, with Captain Broadfoot, of the Royal Engineers, at their head; two six-pounder guns, of which Lieut. Davis had the charge, and a squadron of the 5th regiment Bengal Light Cavalry, commanded by Captain Oldfield, of the same corps. The total amount of fighting men in this column did not probably exceed one thousand; but, as invariably happens in the East, the followers far surpassed them, and when the quantity of animals needed to transport baggage, ammunition, and hospital stores came to be computed, the extent of the line of march proved tremendous. Surely this custom of carrying a crowd of non-combatants about with our armies will, in the course of time, be set aside even in India; for it not only increases the difficulty of subsisting a force four-fold, but it interferes with the pliability of the armed body, which is usually as much concerned to save the baggage from falling into the enemy's hands as to strike a blow, or to make the dispositions which shall bring an enemy within striking distance.

Colonel Monteith set out upon his progress at an early hour on the morning of the 9th of October. He traversed that day the elevated plain which separates Cabul from the Bootkak hills, a range which, rising by degrees, connects itself with the more stupendous mountains that overhang the Koord Cabul, and after a brief interval fall in, and form a junction with, those that lie beyond. The plain in question is tolerably fertile,

being washed by the waters of the Logur and the Cabul streams, which, coming down from different sources, unite about midway between the Balla Hissar and the mountains. It is open too, and the roads, though not good, are abundantly passable, at least in summer. Accordingly the march was performed without difficulty, and brought to a close in good order; and in an open space near the village of Bootkak, having the hills on his right, and the mouth of the pass about a mile or a mile and a half before him, he pitched his tents.

Meanwhile the officers and men of the 13th Light Infantry abode quietly in their cantonments. Some of them, who had been called in from visits to their friends at a distance, expressed regret, that their pleasures should have been interrupted before the time, for nobody expected that, within the compass of a week at the nearest, the rear division of the brigade would be directed to begin its journey. Wherefore the surprise of all concerned may be imagined when, about noon on the 10th, an order was suddenly issued for the regiment to pack its baggage, and set out for Bootkak at dawn on the following morning. As was to be expected, curiosity, if not a deeper feeling, everywhere awoke. Men hastened to inquire into the causes of such an unexpected change of plan; and it can hardly be said that they received any very unlooked-for tidings when it was told them, that their comrades of the 35th had been attacked over-night, and sustained considerable loss.

The 13th were not quite prepared for moving at so short a notice. Trained and good soldiers, from the veteran to the recruit, they were ready at any moment to fight; but the means of transport available were exceedingly deficient, and the accumulation of property is always great in a corps which abides for any length of time in the same place, whether its quarters be fixed in India or in England. Hence many arrangements which individuals had intended to make were still incomplete; and even the public service, as regarded camels and other beasts of burthen, could not be supplied to the extent which the heads of departments might have wished. Nevertheless the order, sudden as it was, took no one by surprise. The men undertook cheerfully to carry their own knapsacks,—a new feature, be it observed, in Oriental warfare; and the officers sacrificed without hesitation

every article of private baggage which it might have been inconvenient to move. To be sure, the soldier's load was lightened to the lowest point that seemed to be compatible with comfort. He was directed to pack up only one spare shirt, one pair of socks, one pair of boots, and his blue trowsers, the whole of which, though increased by the weight of such indispensable articles as soap, towel, and cooking utensils, left him considerably less burthened than an infantry soldier usually is on a home parade. And the more to relieve him, forty rounds of ammunition, instead of sixty, were stowed in his pouch, the remaining twenty being carried for him on the flank of his company by animals allotted for this service. Still both officers and men were put to some inconvenience, more especially as they do not appear to have been informed whether the morrow's march ought to be regarded as a movement towards Hindostan, or as a mere expedition for the relief of their comrades of the 35th. However, no sound of murmur, far less of complaint, was heard in their quarters. On the contrary, they took leave of the sick of their own corps and of such friends and intimate acquaintances as they happened severally to possess in others, and, retiring to rest in good time, were up, with baggage packed, and took their places in the ranks on the first blast of the bugle.

The 13th were excellent marchers. They had proved themselves such both on the advance from Sukkur and in all the various desultory operations in which they had since borne a part; and they swung along on the present occasion at so smart a pace, that their sudden appearance near the camp of the 35th excited as much of surprise as of satisfaction. Kindly greetings passed between the officers of the two corps, the force encamped supplying the comers from afar with a well-earned breakfast, after which the Europeans, pitching their own tents, made ready for such work as their gallant leader might cut out for them against the morrow. Moreover, each tale that was told more and more prepared them for hard knocks in abundance. The pass had, it appeared, been reconnoitred for a good way by the Acting Quarter-Master-General, who reported that it was not only filled with armed men, but that, at a point particularly adapted for the arrangement, a songa, or stone barricade, had been thrown up. Sir Robert Sale received this statement with

characteristic coolness and good humour. He saw, from the natural features of the country, that a few resolute men might keep it against a thousand; and proceeded to order such arrangements as he trusted, making due allowance for the superiority of his own men over the enemy, would put the determination of its defenders to a harder trial than they should be able to sustain.

As a step preparatory to the business of the morrow it was necessary to provide for the security of the night. The enemy might again come on, as they had done on a former occasion; and Sir Robert Sale was determined that, if they did, they should take little by their motion. With this view, strong piquets were posted at nightfall so as to cover the camp in front, on both flanks, and in the rear. Cavalry patrols were likewise directed to be on the look out, particularly in the direction of the pass and on the right; while orders were issued that, at the first alarm, all lights should be extinguished, and regiments and detachments assembled at their respective alarm-posts, without beat of drum, and in profound silence. It was a wise and soldier-like arrangement; but, either because they had had enough of it on the night of the 10th, or that, being aware of the arrival of European reinforcements, they considered it useless to waste their ammunition in a repetition of the game, the enemy offered no molestation, even to the sentries. The dark hours, therefore, passed without disquiet; and men and baggage animals, sleeping soundly, were refreshed.

The brigade orders of the previous evening had indicated, with sufficient accuracy, the arrangements that were to be made on the 12th for forcing the pass. At the first blast of the bugle, therefore, the troops stood to their arms; and the line of march was formed in good time, so that the whole were in readiness to quit the ground at the hour appointed. In front of all, forming an advanced guard, were to move two companies of the 13th. They were to be strengthened by the two flank-companies of the 35th Native Infantry, having the guns, with Captain Broadfoot's sappers, in immediate communication with them; while, with a slight interval between, were to follow the two regiments, right in front, the whole being covered by a company of the 35th as a rear-guard. As to the camp, that was left standing, under the

protection of the guard which is usually told off for such services; and Captain Oldfield with his horsemen was enjoined in addition to keep within the lines, not mounted, because it was desirable that his horses should be fresh, but each man accoutred and ready to spring into the saddle on the first appearance of danger. Finally, patrols were to watch the several approaches to the camp, narrowly; and for all that might follow they had their own good swords to trust to.

The dawn had made considerable progress, and was merging rapidly into broad day, when, at the appointed signal, the troops moved forward. No opposition met them till they were fairly entangled in the pass; and then, from the rocks and precipices on either side, such a storm of fire opened as told of itself that the heights above were occupied in great force. So skilful, too, were the Afghans in the art of skirmishing, that, except by the flashes which their matchlocks emitted, it was impossible to tell where the marksmen lay. Rocks and stones, some of them hardly larger than a thirteen-inch shell, seemed to afford them excellent shelter. They squatted down, showing nothing above the crag except the long barrels of their fusils and the tops of their turbans; and with such unerring aim were their shots thrown, that both in the advanced guard and from the body of the column men soon began to drop. Then might be seen with what exceeding hardihood British soldiers throw themselves into the teeth of danger, and, by affronting, overcome it. The bugles sounded for the leading companies to extend, and away among the precipices ran the skirmishers; scaling corries with a steady foot, and returning the fire of the Afghans with great alacrity. Meanwhile the column slackened not its pace for a moment. Onward it pressed, detaching two or three companies as flankers, which mounted the hills on the right and left, and soon became warmly engaged, till by and by the stockade, or breast-work of huge stones, wherewith the enemy had endeavoured to block up the pass, became conspicuous. A gallant rush was made at this work, which, however, the Afghans did not venture to defend; and then Lieut. Davis, lashing his horses, went on with his guns at a gallop, and at a gallop passed through. From that time the fire of the enemy began to slacken. Their skirmishers, indeed, had already yielded to the impetuous attack

of the leading companies, and the whole now fleeing to the crests of the mountains, whither our men could not follow, gradually melted away, and at last disappeared.

The loss sustained in the course of this affair was less severe than might have been expected. Sir Robert Sale himself received a musket-ball in the ancle just as he entered the pass; and almost at the same moment his aide-de-camp, who rode by his side, had his horse shot under him. Captain Younghusband, of the 35th Native Infantry, likewise, and Lieutenant Miers of the 13th, were wounded severely; and among the rank and file in all the corps engaged casualties occurred. But the total amount of men put *hors de combat* was wonderfully small, considering the great advantage of position which the enemy possessed; and of horses few were struck. Of those attached to the guns, happily not one received damage.

The result of this successful encounter was to carry the 35th Native Infantry, with all their baggage and followers, over one important stage on their homeward journey. The narrowest and most intricate portion of the pass was threaded; and in a sort of punchbowl, or circular valley, offering a position comparatively secure from night attacks, they made preparations for encamping. Not so the 13th. To have left the Bootkak gorge in the hands of the enemy would have been not only to isolate the 35th, but to give up the communications between Cabul and the frontiers altogether; and hence the gallant 13th had received instructions, so soon as the barricade should be forced, to return to the camp whence they had set out in the morning. They now proceeded to obey these instructions; and, carrying their wounded with them, marched back into the defile. Again they were assailed, both from the right hand and from the left, with a desultory, but warm skirmishing fire; and again they ran the gauntlet through it, fighting for every inch of ground, and winning it too, though not without some loss and considerable inconvenience. They then returned to the tents, and to the force, mounted and dismounted, which they had left to protect them; and slept that night as soundly as soldiers are accustomed to do who have gone through a sharp day's work, with honour to themselves.

CHAPTER X.

Night attacks on the 35th—Advance of the 13th to rejoin their comrades.

THERE was a strange delusion at this time,—a cloud, for which it is impossible to account, upon the intellects of all the leading functionaries in Cabul. Nobody would believe that a terrible revolution was at hand. Some days previously to the march of the 35th Native Infantry, three Ghilzie chiefs of note had suddenly quitted the capital, and the next intelligence received of them was, that they had attacked and plundered a rich Kaffela, or caravan, at Tizeen, and occupied, with their armed followers, the difficult defile of Koord-Cabul. Mohammed Akbar Khan, likewise, the fighting son, as he was called, of Dost Mahommed, was known to have arrived at Bameean, from Khooloom, and to be busy, both in person and by means of his emissaries, in conducting intrigues against the government. To speak of the insolence both of chiefs and people in the city would be to repeat a tale with which all Europe rang not long ago; while far and near about Ghuznee, not less than in Kohistan, the worst spirit was known to prevail, without so much as a desire, as it seemed, to hide it. Nevertheless, Sir William Macnaghten, Sir Alexander Burnes, and General Elphinstone, convinced, as was to be expected, by their reasoning, rejected with disdain all warnings of danger. There was no organised conspiracy to get rid of Shah Shujah, or to molest his allies. A people little used to restraint could not be expected to submit all at once, or with a good grace, to any settled government; and as to attacks on Kaffelas, such things had been from time immemorial, and could not be got rid of for many a day; perhaps not during the continuance of the present generation. To such a height, indeed, was the infatuation carried, that when Sir Robert Sale communicated to headquarters the details of his recent march, and the results of the operation, he received an answer of which it would be unjust to all concerned, were it not inserted in the present narrative at

length. "The Ghilzies," so ran this memorable document, which I copy from the Orderly-Book of Sir Robert Sale's division, "are a race of hereditary robbers. Now that they have been defeated they are going about everywhere, and will, no doubt, do all the mischief they can in the dark. The remedy is this: I have sent a man to Jan Feshan Khan, desiring him to keep watch with his Jazailchies round the camp. Shir Mahmoud Khan Baboo Kuzzee should remain at the entrance of the pass at Koord Cabul; and with twenty horsemen, and one hundred footmen, guard the road to Bootkak. From Bootkak to Cabul, security of the road is committed to Meer Cotah Khan Logusee. To-morrow I will have all the caves and caverns searched, and any Ghilzie that may be found will be seized. The only favour I would beg is, that you will request the gentlemen not to move about late at night. The Major-General requests you will make the above arrangements known to the officers under your command, to prevent mistakes; but our security must, notwithstanding; depend mainly upon our own prudence and vigilance."

One clause in this remarkable despatch deserved all possible attention, namely, the last. There was no further doubt on the mind of any member of Sir Robert Sale's force, that his own safety, and that of his comrades, must henceforth depend upon the vigilance of individuals themselves; and the vigilance of videttes, sentries, piquets, and, indeed, of the troops in general, never relaxed for a moment. From day to day the brigade Orderly-Book contained this notice:—"The troops will be on the alert during the night, ready to turn out at a moment's warning;" and on the alert, clothed, accoutred, and ready for action, from the oldest to the youngest, they kept themselves. Nor, to say the truth, was the caution, either of the men or of their leaders, uncalled for. The enemy, as it afterwards came out, withdrew in a body from the pass, not relishing the idea of getting enclosed between the regiments which occupied its two extremities. Nevertheless, straggling parties of them still held to the ravines, and from time to time, especially in the night, fired from their long matchlocks into the camp. No lives, however, were lost, nor were any casualties occasioned; and in due time it came to pass, that men learned to regard such interrup-

tions with indifference, and slept on, unconcerned, so long as the voices of their own sentinels, or the notes of their own bugle, failed to rouse them.

The camp of the 13th was pitched about a couple of miles from the mouth of the pass; and a cavalry piquet posted, about a mile in advance of it, kept a good look-out, and by patrolling constantly, rendered the advance of any considerable body by stealth impossible. The patrols, moreover, were steady, and seldom brought tidings which the event failed to justify: yet once a false alarm arose, and the effect of it was to show how speedily, and with what little stir, that small but most efficient body of men could be made to turn out ready for action. One evening, after the men had lain down, and a profound silence prevailed, the noise of a horse put to his utmost speed caused the sentry to challenge. In an instant the piquet stood to its arms, and the rider being allowed to approach, and reporting that a column had been seen in the gorge, the word was passed quietly from tent to tent, and in two minutes the regiment was formed. No enemy came, however, nor was any on the way. Captain Oldfield, riding forward to reconnoitre, soon came back with intelligence that the patrol had mistaken a few of our own horsemen, bearers of a despatch, for the leading files of an Afghan division, and men and officers returned to their tents, somewhat vexed, perhaps, for the moment, at the interruption which their sleep had sustained; but more than ever satisfied that the caution which had come from head-quarters was not wasted on any member of the body.

From the 12th to the 20th of October, the 13th Light Infantry, with Captain Oldfield's squadron of the 5th Light Cavalry, occupied the encampment near Bootkak. The 35th Native Infantry, likewise, to which was added by and by a rasselah of Anderson's irregular horse, abode in their tents at Koord Cabul, both sections of the brigade being either without orders, or the orders which they received proving so vague and unteligible, that nobody felt justified in acting upon them. Meanwhile, from far and near, swarms of Ghilzies gathered to a head. Now it was reported that at Tizeen they had set up their standard; and by and by, among other rumours that spread

abroad, this was stated, that the very plain in rear of Bootkak was not free from them, and that the capital itself was about to be placed in a state of siege.

It was not the business of Sir Robert Sale or his officers either to change their dispositions or to shift their ground, on account of reports which neither came to them in an official shape, nor were accompanied by any explicit instructions; but of his own immediate followers the veteran took good care. Loose stones being abundant in those parts, the piquets at their out-stations, and the several companies within the lines, were directed to throw up songas, each at its own alarm post, and to make them of a height sufficient to shelter the men while they slept, yet not so lofty as to hinder the muskets from being rested upon them, so that marksmen might take good aim from behind them as securely as under cover of a breastwork.

All this while the constituted authorities in Cabul clung with an astonishing tenacity to the persuasion that the cloud which darkened the political horizon would soon pass away. They could no longer discredit the existence of an insurrectionary movement among the hills between Jellalabad and the capital; and they seem to have admitted, though with evident reluctance, that more than a band of feudatory robbers had taken part in it. They felt, moreover, that let the cost be what it might, there was a necessity for re-establishing their communications with the provinces, which the insurgents had cut off. Hence reinforcements of all arms were marched to join Sir Robert Sale; so that there arrived between the 13th and 18th, first, two guns of European horse-artillery, under Lieutenant Walker; next four companies of the 37th Native Infantry; and, by and by, Captain Backhouse's mountain train; three hundred additional sappers; Captain Abbott's battery, fresh from service in the Zoormut valley; and the remaining companies of the 37th. And high time it was that Sale's corps should be strengthened and rendered serviceable; for the 35th had again been attacked in their position; and the Afghan horsemen who served with them proving treacherous, the enemy had penetrated unchallenged within their lines, and caused a severe loss, both in killed and wounded, ere they were driven off.

Not without some foretaste of the difficulties which awaited

them had these reinforcements reached the point on which they were directed. By some strange mismanagement a detachment of artillery was sent from Cabul without an escort; and the consequence was that though the troopers and their guns, and the tumbrils attached to them, arrived safely in camp, their baggage, animals, and followers were attacked, and the whole of the horses' clothing, as well as the men's tents, carried off. Both men and horses suffered from this loss; nevertheless they were ready, and in excellent humour, for whatever services might be required of them; and on the morning of the 20th the forward movement began. It was uninterrupted in any way till they reached Khoord Cabul. The necessity to which the men were subjected of repeatedly fording a stream which runs through the gorge, and came with its waters more than half-leg high, proved disagreeable enough; for the season was now considerably advanced, and at night the cold began to be severe. But beyond this no inconvenience befel them. Not an enemy appeared; and the baggage keeping well up, and the horses and camels sustaining their loads stoutly, the whole arrived in excellent order and without loss, long before noón, at the camp of their comrades.

The sick and wounded of the 13th had been sent back to Cabul previously to this advance. Those from the 35th were met midway in the pass, journeying in the same direction, and they amounted to eighty persons; for the night affair of the 27th had been a sharp one. Treason co-operated with open violence to work the regiment wrong, It appeared that about noon on the 17th Captain Mac Gregor, the political agent for Jellalabad, who accompanied the 35th, received a written communication from a chief at Kubber Jubber, which announced that the writer "was two hours' march from the British camp, and intended to attack it, against a specified time." An answer was sent back in the same spirit of familiarity, whereby the Kubber chief was advised to make haste, otherwise he might find himself too late for the fun; and the regiment made such preparations as were judged necessary. But no provision could be made against the coming in of a body of Dooraunees, who, having heretofore been regarded as among the most loyal of Shah Shujah's subjects, were permitted to pitch their tents close to that of the political agent. Nothing occurred, however, till about 9 o'clock, when, as the troops stood

to their arms, tidings were brought that a strong column was advancing on the rear of the camp. The grenadier company immediately faced about, and moved towards the point threatened; but they had just cleared the place where the commissariat camels were picketed, when a large body of armed men sprang up from behind the beasts of burden, and fired upon them. Thirty Sipahis, with Captain Jenkins their leader, fell, and the friendly Afghans made a rush towards the baggage: for the people who had joined them late in the afternoon were those from whom this damage came; and the confusion caused by the discovery that the camp was full of traitors, proved, for the moment, considerable. Discipline and courage are not, however, under any circumstances, to be taken quite by surprise. The gallant 35th soon extricated themselves from this dilemma, and took ample vengeance upon the robbers; while the chief from Kubber Jubber, after giving and receiving a few pretty close discharges, retired. That night cost Sir Robert Sale's brigade some valuable lives; and when an account was taken of the camels on the morrow, not fewer than eighty, including one laden with ammunition, were found to be missing.

For the loss of baggage animals to a force circumstanced as was this, nothing could compensate. Application had been made to get the deficiency supplied from the capital; but not a hoof came, and Sir Robert Sale determined, let the consequences be what they might, that he should not budge an inch from his present position till they did come. He therefore turned a deaf ear to the suggestion that it would be both practicable and convenient to push by divisions upon Jellalabad. He had seen enough of the state of the country to convince him that there could be no more passing through it except by dint of hard fighting; and he was too good a soldier to think of exposing his brigade to be cut to pieces in detail. Steadily, therefore, he persisted in his determination not to penetrate beyond Koord Cabul till he should be enabled to do so in force; and his firmness prevailed. On the evening of the 21st such a supply of camels arrived as would suffice to carry the whole of the baggage, including tents, hospital stores, and ammunition; and orders were issued the same hour, that the advance should be begun at an early hour on the morrow.

CHAPTER XI.

March to Tizeen—Affair in the Valley.

It was still dark on the morning of the 22nd of October, when a general stir in the camp began. Bat-men saddled their horses; camel-drivers and the keepers of Yaboos or ponies got the animals ready; and ammunition-boxes, arm-chests, bags of provision, and other necessaries, were conveyed to their proper stations. By and by came the striking and rolling of tents; and finally, the strapping of all these, with officers' trunks, and the little extra baggage that accompanied the force, on the backs of the beasts of burden. Meanwhile, after snatching a hasty meal, the Europeans a morsel of bread, and a cup of coffee, or a glass of rum and water; the Hindostanees their otta or boiled rice; the line of march was formed. The advanced guard was composed of six companies of infantry, two being furnished from each corps, those from the 13th leading. They were supported by two 9-pounders and the mountain train, the latter consisting of 3-pounders, which, though now horsed in the ordinary way, used to be taken to pieces and conveyed on the backs of camels—as the Duke of Wellington conveyed the lightest of his artillery on the backs of mules over the more rugged of the passes of the Pyrenees. Three companies of sappers moved in rear of the guns, having a troop of the 5th Light Cavalry to cover them; and the whole were commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Monteith, of the 35th Native Infantry.

Such was the advanced guard—a strong force, though certainly not stronger than the nature of the country demanded. The main column, consisting of the three infantry regiments, with Abbott's battery, was led by Colonel Dennie, inasmuch as Sir Robert Sale's wound still incapacitated him from taking his proper place in the field; while the rear guard, composed of some Afghan riflemen, with Anderson's horse, and the remaining troop of the 5th Cavalry, acted under the orders of Captain

Oldfield. With respect to the baggage, it was directed to move between the tail of the column and the head of the rear-guard; and the road being narrow it occupied a space so extended as to separate the latter from the former of these armed bodies somewhat inconveniently.

It was about seven o'clock in the morning, when, all things being pronounced to be in order, the word was given to march. Not a bugle sounded, nor was a drum beaten; but with a measured tread, and having their nerves wound up to a pitch of high excitement, the little army quitted its ground. Two files of the 13th led the way; then followed, with a slight interval between, a subdivision of the same corps; and by and by, after a second interval, the head of the advanced guard. For a brief space—that is, while yet they traversed the valley or punch-bowl—Colonel Monteith had his flankers out. But the valley soon came to an end; and with rocks rising shere and perpendicular, on either side of the narrow way into which it sank, their services ceased to be available. They were therefore called in, and moved on in their proper places, with their comrades. It is hardly necessary to state that troops passing through such a ravine as that into which Sale's brigade had now plunged, however brave and disciplined they may be, feel that they are powerless. They look to the right hand and to the left, and behold that a wall shuts them in. They see that to change their formation is impossible; and that a few resolute men—indeed, that women, or even children, might, by rolling huge stones over the precipices, destroy them. Happily for Sale's brigade, not an enemy appeared upon the tops of the nearer ridges throughout the whole of a seventeen miles' march. On some of the more distant peaks which overtopped the precipitous edges of the ravine, horsemen here and there showed themselves; and as the advanced companies drew towards Kubber Jubber, the word was passed to be upon the alert. But even Kubber Jubber, though well adapted, from the nature of the ground, for a resolute stand, was abandoned, and the whole column, including both the baggage and the rear-guard, passed it unmolested.

For seventeen miles or thereabouts the column wound its way through this terrific and circuitous pass; and at last saw before it the opening of the valley of Tizeen. This is one of those

natural hollows which occur at intervals among all the mountain ranges of Afghanistan, forming, as it were, halting-places for caravans, because of the herbage wherewith they are partially covered. A fort or tower stands on the slope of one of the mountains, which recede from each other to a distance of perhaps five English miles; and hamlets scattered here and there give shelter to the tribe which pays obedience to the chief who inhabits it. The valley of Tizeen would be picturesque in the extreme if there were any natural wood to adorn it; but except a few fruit-trees planted about the chieftain's castle, not a leaf is to be seen from one extremity to the other. Nevertheless, the softened character of the hills, which here lay aside in part their rugged formations, gives relief to the eye, as well as to the imagination, which has grown weary by this time of dealing entirely with the terrific, and longs to have associations stirred that connect themselves with pastoral rather than with robber life. For stern in the extreme were all the associations which in the course of their progress heretofore had been stirred in these hardy soldiers. Black, bald, and barren rocks closing in and hanging over them continually, without a shrub, or tree, or blade of grass to ornament them, had fatigued both the mind and the vision; and now the men felt positively glad at the prospect of passing for awhile through a gentler country.

You do not come upon the valley of Tizeen all at once. The pass widens a little as you approach two huge rocks, which, pushing out their shoulders on the right hand and on the left, look like two huge door-posts on which a pair of enormous folding gates might be swung. The leading files were already between these rocks, when the officer commanding saw, just inside their curvature, a small body of Afghan horse drawn up. He halted his men, and riding back in all haste, suggested to Colonel Monteith that it would be a good thing to let loose the cavalry upon them, inasmuch as they might easily be cut off. Colonel Monteith, however, was too prudent a soldier to throw his people in such a country by driblets out of hand; so he closed up the whole of the advanced guard, and moved forward. It was well that he did so. No sooner were the projecting crags turned than the hills which bounded the valley on all sides were seen to swarm with Afghans, who had manifestly placed this

body of horse as a decoy wherewith to entice the British cavalry forward, and to bring them under such a fire as must have emptied every saddle in a moment. Now then was the time to act; and Colonel Monteith did not suffer the fortunate moment to escape him.

The guns were immediately ordered to the front. They came up at a hand-gallop, the infantry opening to the right and left in order to let them pass; and unlimbering with all haste, the artillerymen threw some shells with admirable precision among the masses; the effect was very striking. You saw some men fall, and the rest, as if terrified at finding themselves in so exposed a situation, waved to and fro, and then broke, and retired in all directions. At this moment Colonel Dennie rode up; and a gallant young officer of the 13th, Lieutenant E. King* by name, eagerly entreated that he might have leave, with the company which he commanded, to drive "the rascals," as he termed them, from the hill to which they had retreated. Dennie threw a rapid glance over the scene, and, to the great delight of Mr. King, replied "Surely." Both companies of the 13th formed, and forward they went, one led by Mr. King, the other by Lieut. Rattray, of the same regiment, at the double step, and in skirmishing order.

The affair that followed resembled for a while rather the pursuit of a defeated enemy than an attack upon a strong position. There was a good deal of firing on both sides, but the Afghans made no stand. They retreated with great celerity, each man as he delivered his shot, till the whole were fairly pushed over the hill, and were seen ascending another that lay beyond it. It would have been well for the brave fellows who had carried this nearer height had they been content with their first success. No good was to be gained by crossing the dell that lay under it; for the Afghans could not from the ground to which they had withdrawn molest the column on its march, and nothing more was needed or desired than to keep open the road along which the column moved. But young soldiers, like hunters imperfectly broken to their work, are apt to be carried away by the excitement of success; and seeing the enemy halt, turn round, and begin to throw long

* This was he who made himself so conspicuous for his bravery at the assault on the castle of Julgah.

shots at them across the valley, our people set up a shout, and dashed forward. The skirmish was warmer, and the ground better contested on this occasion, than before. The hill, indeed, was steeper, and the Afghans, though they rarely permitted our men to come within three hundred yards of them, kept up a warm fire from behind the many rocks and crags with which its face was broken. But they could not maintain their ground. They were forced back and back, till they began to disappear over the ridge; whereupon the assailants, whose last move had not been approved of by Colonel Dennie, were at length, though not without some difficulty, halted.

Colonel Dennie had seen from his post upon the road that his fiery young friends were getting into a scrape. He therefore ordered up two additional companies, with a body of the Shah's sappers, to reinforce them; and these troops did their duty well, and took their own share in the later skirmish. They sustained some loss likewise; for Lieut. Orr, a good officer, who commanded the sappers, was severely wounded on the very crest of the hill; a private of the 13th falling dead at the same moment beside him. The whole, however, halted at last; and till four o'clock in the afternoon kept their ground, which was by no means favourable, against repeated though desultory advances by the enemy. Meanwhile the main body of the division moved on unmolested; but just as the baggage approached the termination of the pass, a warm fire opened upon it and upon the rear-guard from the hills that hung over them. A considerable loss and great confusion was the consequence. Many camp-followers fled, leaving the camels and other beasts of burthen to their fate. The cavalry could offer no resistance to marksmen perched upon the sides of overhanging rocks, and the Shah's riflemen seemed scarcely in earnest in their efforts to dislodge them. Now it was in operations such as this that, from the beginning to the end of the war, the Afghans proved themselves to be especially skilful. Though individually brave, they seldom stood to oppose our men either in a stand-up fight upon the plain, or in a smart skirmish: but wherever they found an opening whereby to approach our baggage and rear-guards at a disadvantage, no troops in the world knew better how to turn it to account. They slew this day a good many men, and carried off no inconsiderable portion of

booty; of which it would be hard to say whether our people grudged them the most nine new hospital tents, which with all the furniture they appropriated, or certain kegs containing not fewer than thirty thousand rounds of musket ammunition.

While the main body thus pushed on, and the rear sustained loss and damage, the skirmishers who covered the line of march from the hill which they had so gallantly carried, were becoming every hour environed by dangers, more formidable than they seem to have anticipated when the morning's work began. Their ammunition grew short, insomuch that they ceased by degrees to reply to the fire of the enemy, and failed therefore to keep them at a distance. At this unlucky moment likewise, an order, which they do not appear rightly to have understood, arrived to direct them in their retreat. The instructions issued were, that they should withdraw by alternate companies, one descending the hill and passing over to the nearer height, while the other, holding its ground, should keep the Afghans at bay. But either because the message was delivered indistinctly, or that they all felt themselves to be alike useless with empty pouches, the whole force, as soon as the movement was supposed to be sanctioned, began their retreat together. Moreover it soon became, as retreats conducted under similar circumstances invariably do, little better than a race. Away the men ran helter-skelter down the declivity, while the enemy, taking courage from the panic which they believed to have fallen upon the Feringhees, followed close upon their heels. It was to no purpose that Lieutenants Rattray and King called aloud to the men to slacken their pace, or warned them that the Afghans were closing upon them. They neither paused to show a front, nor took the smallest pains to keep themselves under cover, but rushed down the descent and over the glen, and reached the opposite rise eagerly. Meanwhile the officers, gathering some eight or ten men about them, took post behind a range of low rocks, and made a show of resistance: but when the enemy were arrived within twenty yards of the position, the men declared, with one accord, that they had not a cartridge left; and, no longer restrained by the voices of the officers, took to their heels. It was a run for life or death on all sides, and not in all quarters conducted successfully. Lieut. Rattray escaped,

his safety being occasioned by a fall from a rock, which might have killed him, but which merely carried him, at the expense of a few bruises, out of the range of the shot, which sang round him like hail. Lieut. King was not so fortunate; an Afghan bullet pierced his heart, and he rolled dead to the bottom of the declivity. He was a gallant and chivalrous young soldier, whom his comrades greatly loved, and over whose untimely fate they mourned with much sincerity. Yet he died a soldier's death; and now that time has in some measure closed up the wound in their spirits, both his relatives and they who saw him fall cannot but find comfort in this remembrance of him.

Having cleared the ravine which separated the two hills, the skirmishers, supplied with fresh ammunition, and reinforced by three more companies, took up their ground on that which they had first won. It was called the Tower-hill, because of the chief's castle which crowned one of its lower ridges, and formed a better position for protecting the army on its march than that to which their impetuosity had carried them. They were repeatedly threatened, but never seriously attacked; for the manner in which they saluted the more daring of their assailants proved that they had made up their minds not to be driven off; and the valour of the enemy seldom led them to seek, by hard fighting, any object which our troops appeared determined not to surrender on other terms. Moreover, just before dark, Abbott's guns opened with shot and shell upon the masses which threatened them, and they soon melted away. Having remained, therefore, on the rising ground till ten or eleven o'clock at night, the flankers were recalled by orders from Sir Robert Sale, and marched into camp.

CHAPTER XII.

March from Tizeen—Rear-guard engaged.

THE same caution which had marked the whole of Sir Robert Sale's proceedings from the outset was manifested in the arrangement of his camp in the valley of Tizeen. Strong piquets were planted on every side, and not they alone, but the advanced sentries were ordered to construct songas for their own protection; while within the lines breastworks of loose stones were thrown up, from behind which the troops might be able to defend themselves against a large superiority of numbers. Not contented with these precautions, Sir Robert made arrangements for attacking, on the morrow, the chief's castle; and one-half the amount of his infantry, together with a still larger proportion of his artillery, were directed to follow Col. Dennie on this service. But just as the troops had paraded, and were preparing to quit the ground, a messenger came in from the obnoxious chief with a letter to the political agent, in which he professed his inability to resist the Feringhees, and proposed to come to an accommodation with them. "I know," so ran his despatch, "that I and my countrymen cannot pretend to cope with your soldiers. If, therefore, you attack my castle, I shall flee to the hills, destroying, before I go, my whole stock of provisions for the winter. We may starve, but you will not be benefited; and starving men sometimes do desperate things. I do not wish to fight any more; offer me terms."

Captain MacGregor, having read this characteristic communication, proceeded with it to General Sale's tent; and expressing an opinion that the writer would cheerfully agree to such conditions as might be proposed, he prevailed upon the General to counter-order the march of the troops that had been about to operate against the tower. Neither, as it seemed, had the political agent suffered his hopes to outrun probabilities; for the chief of Tizeen expressed his willingness to come into the treaty

proposed, and to give hostages for his faithful fulfilment of it. Accordingly about six o'clock in the evening of the 23rd, ten heads of families arrived in the camp, who were placed under surveillance rather for appearance's sake than because of any use that would be made of them; for the slaughter of hostages is an atrocity unknown with English armies, whether serving in the East or in the West. However, it was taken for granted that the Afghans could not possibly be aware of this difference between their usages and ours: and the presence among them of these ten poor wretches, who looked more like the outcasts of a tribe than its leading members, induced the inhabitants of the British camp to hope for an immediate pacification of the valley.

Thus far the chief was true to his word, that, in the course of the 25th, considerable supplies of provisions and forage were sent into camp. The people who brought them, however, seemed to be excessively out of humour, and would neither accept nor bestow the smallest civilities on the strangers; indeed, it was observed by more than one of our people, that when they went away they spat on the ground—a sure token of their contempt and abhorrence of the parties with which they had just been conversing. The consequence was, that strict orders were issued to hinder either soldiers or followers from wandering beyond the line of the advanced sentries, while severe punishment was denounced against such as might be convicted of plundering any of the villages, or solitary huts, that were scattered through the valley. In like manner the camels were prohibited from being led to pasture far across the plain; and wherever they went, it was directed that a guard should attend them; "Though the enemy have given hostages," ran one of Sir Robert Sale's orders, "it would be both imprudent and unsafe in us to relax our vigilance. The troops will therefore sleep fully accoutred, in front of their lines, and under cover of the breastworks; and the piquets and sentries will be as much as ever upon the alert, knowing that on our own vigilance both our honour and our safety depend."

In the course of the 23rd, an attempt was made to recover part of the baggage which had been left in the pass, by sending back two companies of Native Infantry to look for it. The search was not very profitable in any respect, and especially failed in regard to a point which was felt at this moment to be

more important than any other. None of the camels or horses which had broken loose amid the confusion were found; and the loss, as well in this way, as by death, whether through overfatigue or by the bullets of the enemy, had become so great as seriously to affect the pliability of the division. Indeed, so deficient did he find himself in the means of transport, that Sir Robert Sale, when the time came for moving on, determined to move with no more than his original command. Accordingly the 37th Native Infantry, with a detachment from Captain Backhouse's mountain train, and three companies of sappers under a European officer, were directed to stand fast, the Deputy Assistant Quarter Master General being instructed to make choice for them of a defensible position; and to await in the valley of Tizeen the coming up of the 54th, which the General had been led to believe would arrive in a few days, bringing with it a convoy of sick on the way to the provinces, and some treasure for the use of his own brigade. As soon as these should arrive, the 37th were to conduct both sick and treasure to Jellalabad, and, whether they came early or late, Major Griffiths, commanding the 37th, was requested to communicate as frequently as possible with Sir Robert Sale and the rest of the division.

Having adjusted these matters, and appropriated to his own use every disposable animal that seemed capable of bearing a burthen, General Sale gave orders that at half-past six on the morning of the 26th, the column of march should be formed. The troops were to fall in right in front, having for the advanced guard two companies of the 13th Light Infantry, four guns of Captain Abbott's battery, two companies 35th Native Infantry, and one company of Sappers; the main body was to consist of the strength of the two regiments; and to be followed, first by the ammunition and ordnance stores, under the escort of a company of Sappers, and next by Captain Backhouse's mountain-train, that is to say, by as many guns as had not been allotted for the strengthening of the position of the 37th regiment. Next moved the baggage, a long and cumbrous line, the charge of which was devolved upon a troop of the 5th Light Cavalry, and a rasselah of the Shah's horse; with instructions to distribute themselves as much as possible along either flank, so as to afford protection from marauders to this by far the feeblest

portion of the cavalcade. Finally, a strong rear-guard, consisting of two guns from Abbott's battery, two companies of the 35th Native Infantry, one company of Sappers, and the remaining troop of the 5th Light Cavalry, closed the column, and acted under the orders of Captain Oldfield, an officer of much intelligence, and unconquerable courage and activity.

Little occurred in the course of the march of the 26th of which it is necessary to make mention. The route of the column lay through a country less difficult than that which it had already passed; yet so commanded at every step as to render extreme vigilance on the part of the officers necessary; but it did so happen that not on any occasion were the advanced parties withstood, or the progress of the main body interrupted. The rear-guard, to be sure, was exposed as usual to a good deal of desultory fighting. It produced, however, few casualties, and, thanks to the excellent arrangements that had been made, occasioned neither loss nor confusion among their baggage. So that, after compassing about ten English miles, the whole arrived in good order at a place called Seh-Baba, where the tents were pitched.

To explain how the camp was arranged and protected from one night to another; how the outposts were stationed, and the sentries covered; and the troops within the lines sent to rest armed and accoutred, would be to repeat a tale which, in its reiteration, however interesting when first told, could not fail to weary both the reader and the writer. Enough is done when I state, that no precaution required by the critical position of the force was omitted to ensure its safety; and that care was taken not only to issue provisions regularly, but to see that they were carefully cooked and eaten. In spite, therefore, of fatigue and much watching, the brigade enjoyed as good health as the veteran officer at its head could have wished; for the return of sick, which now lies before me, presents a list of little else than of gallant fellows, officers and privates, who had received wounds in the course of their encounters with the enemy.

Having reached the ground in good time on the 26th, the troops were enabled to make themselves comfortable; and an opportunity was afforded to the Brigadier of circulating among the several corps copies of the general orders which overtook him on the march to Cabul. These related principally to the

distribution of the force which was to remain in Afghanistan, and were only so far of interest to Sale's brigade, that they explained what was already understood, and had been acted upon from the outset; namely, that the 13th and 35th regiments were on their march to the provinces, and that the 37th had been directed to join them. But the 37th Sale had already ordered back as far as Kubber Jubber, partly because the valley of Tizeen was considered too exposed, partly in order that they might be nearer to a supply of baggage animals, without receiving which their movement on Jellalabad had become impracticable. Accordingly, though men read and made their remarks on the probable results as these might affect the convenience and comforts of others, their thoughts soon reverted to a consideration of their own position, which the progress of each new hour more and more tended to convince them was beset with grave difficulties, and surrounded with very many dangers.

At the usual hour in the morning of the 28th the march of the brigade began. It was conducted in the same order as before; but partly because the country became more difficult as the troops advanced, partly because the absence of serious molestation throughout the preceding day led the camp followers to relax in their discipline during the present, a greater disposition to stray from beneath the protection of the column was exhibited than proved either judicious or safe. The road ran today through a sort of broken valley, hemmed in as usual by precipitous rocks; but having some width in itself, though interrupted continually by bold hills or heights that reared themselves at intervals throughout its whole extent. A winding course was therefore that which the troops followed; and they ascended and descended continually short, steep hills, after traversing one of which all the length of way which might have been previously compassed was hidden from view. On the right hand and on the left, likewise, similar waves of rock and soil were rolled; so that the straggler who ventured perhaps a hundred yards from the flank of the column disappeared altogether. Such a country, with its ribs of granite closing in the whole, offers far greater facilities of attack to an active enemy than a mere gorge hemmed in between two walls. Walls of rock are for the most part as precipitous, and therefore as inac-

cessible from the rear as from the front; or else they furnish no cover to marksmen who surmount them; and not unfrequently, by receding towards their ridges, hinder such as may have ascended thither from obtaining any view of the road that passes beneath. But dips and hollows, such as the brigade this day encountered, seem made for affording cover to ambuscades and plunderers; and both were encountered abundantly as the march proceeded.

It was not the custom of the Afghans to measure themselves with our troops so long as there seemed to be any chance of acquiring spoil without it; and to-day both the advanced guard and the main body held their course unmolested. But no sooner had the head of the line of baggage passed a certain point than the business of plunder began. An unfortunate grass-cutter, having wandered but a few yards apart from the baggage-guard, was set upon by a band of men who lay hidden behind some rocks, and murdered. This done, the assassins opened a fire upon the camels and their leaders, which was taken up far and near by clouds of their companions; and by and by the faces of the far-off hills were seen to swarm with armed men. It would not do to halt the column for such an interruption as this. Where an object is to be gained in war, the officer who commands must disregard as much as possible minor inconveniences, and press steadily toward the end; and Sir Robert Sale, acting upon this principle, caused his little army to continue its march as it had heretofore done. But he detached company after company from the column, throwing one upon this height and another upon that; and so distributing the whole that they should furnish a succession of guards to the baggage and the camp-followers at every point along the road which seemed more than others to require protection. By these means the enemy's attention was turned from those who could not defend themselves; and they were forced, instead of killing camels and ponies, to enter upon a series of warm skirmishes, from which, if our people sustained some loss, the loss caused to the aggressors was much greater.

This state of things continued throughout the whole of the day's march, and came to an end only when, at a place called Kutta Sing, the troops halted. Neither after the tents were

pitched did the enemy venture to approach, for they appear by this time to have been taught that a British camp is not like an Afghan outspan, a mere mass of human beings in confusion. But multitudes were seen by the piquets crossing the road all night long, as if there were some great design in progress, and armed men were concentrating in order to effect it. The political agent being informed of all this received the announcement with perfect indifference. He assured Sir Robert Sale that there was no national feeling of hostility towards the English anywhere. The brigade was now in the most savage part of the kingdom, where every chief was a leader of brigands and every man a robber: but after the arrangements that had been entered into with the Tizeen Patriarch, it was not to be thought of that any opposition would be made to its onward progress. All, therefore, that was necessary seemed to be, that the rear and the baggage should be looked to; for he had reason to believe that sixty or eighty ruffians had combined to harass the morrow's march, and it would be well to keep an eye to them from the first.

Thus warned, and looking perhaps rather to his own anticipations of what might befal than to Captain MacGregor's assurances, Sir Robert Sale issued in the course of the day fresh and stringent orders relative to the disposition of the march on the morrow. He directed Lieut. Meyne, with a detachment of cavalry, to be on the alert at the sounding of the first bugle, and to stop and turn back any camp followers who might endeavour, as many of them seemed inclined, to precede the brigade in its advance. Similar instructions were given to the officers in command of the piquets by which the flanks of the camp were covered. On no account whatever could man or beast be suffered to obstruct the road, or to pass beyond his legitimate place in the line of march; for the safety of the whole depended on the freedom and readiness with which corps and armed bodies should be able to form up and act in case of danger. For the same reason, and to prevent any loss or confusion in the event of an attack, quarter-masters of regiments were informed that the proper place for their spare ammunition was on the right flank of their respective corps, and they were charged to have their animals loaded and led to their stations in good time. No particle of baggage, whether public or private, was to move

with the magazines; and even the sick, with the hospital tents and stores, had a place assigned to them, guarded indeed, and therefore comparatively safe, yet clear of all risk of interference with the formations of the fighting part of the force. Finally, the men were to sleep accoutred, while the companies appointed to act as a rear-guard next day were directed to relieve the out-posts after sunset, so that they might be on their ground, and afford adequate protection to the camp as soon as it should begin to move.

It was well for the brigade that the General had taken a more serious view of the state of affairs than the political agent; for the column had scarcely quitted its ground, and the baggage was yet halted, when not sixty or eighty, but some hundreds of well-armed men, rose from behind the hillocks and broken ground that lay about the camp, and fell fiercely upon the rear-guard. The firing on both sides was warm and incessant; and though Backhouse's mountain guns sent showers of grape and shrapnell among the assailants, they were not to be denied. Men began to drop, few killed but many wounded; and the difficulty of conveying them away, through the absence of a sufficient number of doolies, became constantly greater. Not one, however, was left behind. The rear-guard fought stoutly: they never yielded a foot of ground till all behind them was clear and at a sufficient distance; and even then they merely passed from one favourable position to another, where they might again make a stand. So the greater portion of the day was spent; for the enemy, though they did not succeed in picking up a single camel, hung upon the line of march till it drew to an end: and when the list of casualties came to be taken, which was done as soon after the pitching of the tents as possible, it showed a considerable addition to the number of helpless persons, in which list Lieut. Jennings, of the 13th, having received a severe wound through the arm, was included.

CHAPTER XIII.

March to Gundamuck—Smart Affair with the Rear-guard.

THUS far the progress of the little army had been conducted without much loss or any great pressure from fatigue. The marches were generally short: that of the 28th of October hardly exceeded five miles; and though the road was rough, from the quantity of loose stones which covered it, and therefore exceedingly inconvenient for wheel-carriages, both men and horses managed to get along without foundering. The greatest trial of all was the want of forage. Not a blade of grass grew, except here and there, and in very small patches, along the entire course of the glen; and the water was in some places so impregnated with mineral substances, that neither men nor animals could drink it. The cold, likewise, after sunset, became doubly sharp in consequence of the great heat of the day, and all were exposed to it; for it was only when a halt of a day or two had been determined upon, that the tents were pitched. No body of troops could, however, preserve better order or sustain a nobler spirit. Crime was unknown: nobody marauded; nobody indulged to excess in the use of spirituous liquors; and the consequence was that at every hour, both of the day and night, the whole (from the general down to the drum-boy) were ready and willing to undertake any service.

The division was now approaching a part of the road, after crossing which, provided it were done well, an opinion prevailed, both in camp and elsewhere, that the main obstacle to their safe arrival at Jellalabad would be surmounted. How it might fare with them amid the descent of the Khyber, nobody appeared to know; but supposing them to be fairly clear of the pass of Jugdulluck, and to reach the cantonments of Gundamuck, then there was nothing more to stop them in their progress towards the town, where rest would be afforded them. Moreover, by following the more circuitous of the two roads which lead from

Tizeen to the valley of Jugdulluck, they had thrown the hostile natives considerably out in their calculations. As it came afterwards to be known, the Ooloos (for this tribe it is which inhabits the mountain-ranges from Seh Baba to the extreme verge of the Gundamuck valley) had counted on the advance of the Feringhees through the Peri pass, and had, in consequence, not only fortified it midway, but had drawn thither every disposable man, with the intention of fighting a great battle. But Sir Robert Sale, suspecting the intention, had wisely diverged from this gorge, and determined to face, and by dint of hard fighting, if necessary, to force the ravine into Jugdulluck. At the same time, the continued movement of clouds of men during the afternoon of the 28th, and, indeed, all night long, round the camp and away towards the pass in question, left no room to doubt that there would be hard work for both parties ere the valley that lay beyond it could be reached. Not on this account, however, was any change of plan, much less of route, contemplated; on the contrary, the troops were warned that the march would begin at the usual hour, half-past seven, on the following morning, care being taken to reinforce considerably both the advanced guard and the rear-guard; and to support them with a stronger artillery than as yet had been allotted to this service—the former having four guns from Abbott's battery attached, the latter two from the same effective corps.

The road on which the division now entered runs for several miles along the bottom of a narrow mountain defile. It is hemmed in on both sides, not like the path between Bootkak and Jubber Kubber, by perpendicular cliffs, but by a succession of mountains, one rising above the other till the whole are terminated far in the rear by a long line of sugar-loaf granite peaks. These hills, though both steep and stony, are quite accessible by active men, and approach so close to the road, that marksmen firing from the summits of the nearest, may do execution upon a column beneath, though their aim will of course be uncertain. Moreover, here and there in the face of this range gullies and ravines show themselves, which communicate with other valleys behind the range, and are used by the inhabitants as the ordinary channels of communication with them. Such a pass the military reader will at once perceive presented obstacles to the march of

troops a thousandfold more formidable than any mere rent, so to speak, through the heart of a chain of rocks; and Sir Robert Sale, who was neither ignorant of the locality nor inclined to underrate its importance, made his dispositions for a battle, should it be forced upon him, with characteristic energy and self-possession.

The usual distribution of the force into advance, main body, and rear-guard, was of course made; and the companies allotted for the latter service being ordered upon piquet at sunset, were in their places and ready to cover the march of the baggage after the column had moved on. Protection, however, was required this day for the column itself, as well as for the baggage, and flanking parties were in consequence thrown out to clear the nearest hills. These soon became engaged in a very lively skirmish, for the enemy crowded the face of the ascent, and showed themselves not less skilful than heretofore in taking advantage of every cover that offered. Nevertheless, our men pressed on, and reinforcements being from time to time sent to them, they gained ground upon the Afghans, though not without sustaining some loss. Among the light troops who distinguished themselves on that occasion, it is but justice to particularise two companies of Goorkhas, forming a portion of that corps of the Shah Shujah's army which accompanied Sir Robert Sale's column. Small men, but resolute and active, they ran from rock to rock with surprising celerity, and delivered their fire with a degree of accuracy and a correctness of aim which won for them the applause of their European comrades. The officers and men of the 13th, though excellent skirmishers themselves, beheld the working of these wild mountaineers with delight.

Up and up the mountain-side the light troops scrambled, till they attained the summits of the nearest spurs, and looked down upon the column winding beneath, at a distance of full two thousand feet. The rarefaction of the atmosphere at this great altitude (for the road in the pass was full five thousand feet above the level of the sea) combined with the intense heat to blow the men exceedingly: so the bugles sounded a halt, and all lay down to refresh. Unfortunately, however, the halt took place on the left of the line of march, just within long range of a breastwork; from behind which, on the slope of another hill, a party

of the enemy kept up an incessant fusilade. One officer, Lieutenant Rattray, of the 13th, and several men, were wounded on that occasion; and more might have suffered, had not the bugles from below warned the skirmishers to move on. They did so, holding the high grounds which they had won, and sweeping from before them clouds of the enemy, who forthwith betook themselves to the more remote ridges. But, however efficacious the proceeding might be in covering the head, and indeed the whole extent of the column, from insult, it left the rear-guard exposed to serious dangers, which were not slow in showing themselves. The enemy, though beaten from the nearer hills, were not cowed. On the contrary, they retired into the valley on the other side; and, passing round, came out at the different ravines of which notice has been taken as falling in upon the road at various points near the beginning of the pass. Their numbers were very formidable; and whether because the sense of a decided superiority in this respect gave them courage, or that the string of camels and ponies that passed under their view inflamed their cupidity, they rushed into action against the rear-guard with a degree of determination and eagerness, such as they had not on any previous occasion exhibited. A very warm and bloody encounter ensued, during which it is no disgrace to the handful of British troops engaged to admit that they fell for a moment into confusion. They were attacked simultaneously on both flanks, in front, and in rear; and were forced to cut their way through a swarm of men who, issuing from the glens, threw themselves right in the middle of the line of baggage, and forced back a portion of it upon the leading company of the rear-guard. But a momentary confusion is soon rectified when officers know their duty, and men are inured to war.

The rear-guard was not slow in meeting with its skirmishers their assailants on all sides, while the mass pushed at once through that portion of the enemy which had broken the line of march; and then the retreat was conducted with as much celerity as a regard to the safety of the wounded would permit. In this affair the loss on the side of the English was very severe. Next day's returns showed that, between the flank patrols and the rear-guard, twenty-nine men had been killed and ninety-one wounded; and among the former was numbered an officer of great merit and

still higher promise, Captain Wyndham, of the 35th Native Infantry. Seeing a wounded soldier unable to get on, he dismounted and lent him his horse. But Captain Wyndham was himself lame, from a previous hurt; and could not, therefore, when the rush of the enemy was the fiercest, keep up with his own people in their retreat: and the consequence was, that he, who had generously relinquished an advantage in order that a poor wounded comrade should not be lost, was himself overtaken by the savages that hung upon the rear of his party, and after a brave resistance, slain.

The division halted for the night at a point in the pass which seemed to offer rather more facilities of defence than the rest. This measure was the more necessary, that doolies and other means of transport for the sick and wounded had begun to grow scarce; and, happily for all concerned, no attempt was made to annoy the encampment. Neither was the march of the morrow interrupted, though performed for ten miles through a country little less dangerous than that which had just been traversed. A good deal of baggage had been lost the day before. If the animals be shot, or their drivers forsake them, it is impossible for the rear-guard of an army, pressed upon by a resolute enemy, to prevent this; indeed, considering the difficulties of ground to which our men were exposed on the present occasion, the only real subject of wonder is, that the whole of the baggage was not sacrificed. Be this, however, as it may, the column enjoyed, on the 30th of October, an entire exemption from molestation. A few shots, and those entirely harmless, were exchanged between the flank patrols and some straggling Afghans, whose paucity was accounted for by the assumption that the Ooloos were too busy dividing the spoil in the rear, to think of the less safe, though hardly less characteristic employment, of harassing the Feringhees in the front.

The highest point in the succession of passes that intervene between Bootkak and Jellalabad had by this time been surmounted. The march of the 3rd was therefore upon a declivity all the way; and it terminated about two in the afternoon, by introducing the column into a romantic, and, comparatively speaking, fertile strath of considerable extent, and studded with towers and hamlets. This was the valley of Gundamuck, one

of Shah Shujah's military posts; where, in a cantonment built for their accommodation, he kept two of his own regiments, one of cavalry, the other of infantry, with a corps of Jezailchees, or riflemen—all under European officers. It was overspread with vegetation, and feathered here and there with wood; among which were fruit-trees of different kinds in abundance, and vines, of which the produce was delicious; and a clear but shallow stream ran with a broken current through the midst of it. It is scarcely necessary to add, that such a scene was beheld by the hardy men who gazed upon it with positive delight. For eighteen successive days they had toiled through the heart of bleak and arid mountains. Beneath their feet lay a loose shingle, intermixed with large stones, such as torrents roll onwards in their course, and leave high and dry when the strength of the water recedes; while above them and around, uprose walls of granite, surmounted by jagged peaks, or broken cliffs, on which not so much as a blade of grass grew. The contrast was therefore exceedingly striking; and the travellers relished it the more, that there seemed some prospect of obtaining here the rest of which they stood in need, while the addition of fruit and vegetables to their diet promised as much to benefit the health of the men, as it conduced in every possible way to gratify their tastes.

The cantonment, or barrack, which had been erected for the Shah's troops occupied the summit of an extensive table-land, which occurred about the centre of the valley. Close to these huts the tents of Sale's brigades were pitched, and though the inmates felt themselves comparatively secure, the same precautions were adopted to guard against surprise as if an enemy had been beside them. Piquets outline and inline were on duty day and night, and care was taken not only to prevent straggling at a distance, but to hinder suspicious-looking strangers from penetrating in any numbers within the line of sentries. Strict orders were issued, likewise, to officers commanding corps, that they would caution their men against plundering, and punish every act of the sort on the instant; in a word, everything was done which prudence and humanity could suggest to preserve discipline among the troops, and to conciliate by fair dealing in business, and kind treatment otherwise, the good will of the inhabitants.

These laudable endeavours did not fail to produce the desired result. Chief after chief inhabiting the different castles round sent in to signify their submission, and the camp was supplied with provisions of every sort, for which the parties bringing it were paid on a liberal scale. One man alone, Meer Afzal Khan by name, held aloof: and against his tower, which stood upon an eminence about four miles distant from the cantonment, Sir Robert Sale determined to send an expedition. The movement took place on the 9th of November, and was thus far successful that the fort was evacuated by its garrison as soon as the brigade approached; but the chief with his retainers escaped to the mountains, about fifteen only being cut to pieces by the cavalry. That night the troops slept in and around the castle; and on the morrow, leaving two hundred Khyberrees, under Lieutenant Gerrard, to keep possession, the remainder returned to camp.

CHAPTER XIV.

Bad tidings from Cabul—March—Arrival in Camp of unlooked-for Visitors—Sharp Action—Approach Jellalabad.

THE division had now been nearly three weeks without any tidings from Cabul. No convoys nor solitary messengers followed them, nor had any orders been received of a later date than the 16th of October; and the minds of men were beginning to be uncomfortable, an apprehension gaining ground that the communication between their comrades in the Afghan capital and the provinces could not, without some change of system, be kept open. Fears, too, were experienced and expressed lest the discontent which they all saw to prevail ere they set out upon their homeward progress should have come to a head, and a general rising taken place. But it was not till the morning of the 7th that anything occurred tending in the most remote degree to give consistency to these suspicions. Moreover, when men set themselves to inquire into the source of the various rumours that spread through the camp, the result was in every instance unsatisfactory. Everybody had heard something, yet nobody could name his informer; such an informer at least as might be supposed to have access to sources of intelligence that were not open to the rest. On the 7th, however, a chief, supposed to be in Shah Shujah's interests, and who had undertaken to guard the Jugdulluck pass till Sir William Macnaghten, the envoy, should have passed through, sent to inform Sir Robert Sale that there had been a revolt at Cabul, and much hard fighting, but that the Shah's troops and the Feringhees were victorious. Now there was just enough in this communication to increase the anxiety of the brigade, certainly not to allay it. No particulars of the fight or of the victory were stated; and whether from the manner of the messenger, or that we are all apt to be suspicious of such tidings of things as reach us vaguely from afar, a distrust of the result seems involuntarily to have entered

into the minds of both officers and men. Moreover, the tribes in the valley began, by degrees, to put on a more insolent air; and another messenger, who arrived on the 9th, brought letters, as he himself stated, from Cabul, and distributed them to the Janbazees, or Shah's regiment of cavalry. The circumstance was considered by no means satisfactory at head-quarter tent: wherefore all the piquets were ordered to be strengthened at sunset, and the officers commanding were directed to keep an eye upon these horsemen.

So passed the interval between the morning of the 9th and the evening of the 10th. It was a period of considerable uneasiness everywhere; for rumours of impending attacks began again to pervade the camp, and the patrols of the 5th Light Cavalry, which went round it by night, were fired upon. Under these circumstances, Sir Robert Sale determined to push without further delay upon Jellalabad, and to occupy the town, and keep it till he should be correctly informed in regard to the state of affairs at the capital. Accordingly, instructions were given to get the baggage animals ready, and to be prepared to strike the tents. But when the moment came for mustering camels and ponies, by far the greater number were absent. The drivers, it appeared, had led them out, under the pretext of feeding, and were fled, no one knew whither, and any attempt to seek for them, even among the hills nearest at hand, was pronounced hopeless. This was most vexatious, yet Sale, remembering that the safety of his troops was his first object, determined not to abandon the plan of marching on Jellalabad. On the contrary, he desired that such animals as yet remained should be laden with ammunition, hospital and commissariat stores, and that the camp equipage and the private baggage of officers should be committed to the keeping of the Shah's regiments which he proposed to leave in charge of the cantonment. Not a murmur or word of complaint escaped any man's lips when these orders were read: all felt that the time was come when private convenience must give way to the attainment of a public good, and all were ready to make whatever sacrifices the urgency of circumstances might require.

In this spirit the troops addressed themselves to the packing of their knapsacks, and the officers to the securing in the best way

they could such indispensable articles as they imagined that they would be able to transport upon their riding horses, or about their own persons. The reinforcements for the piquets likewise took up their ground, and the patrols did their duty. Moreover, nobody was surprised to find the desultory firing about the camp more frequent and more warm than heretofore. Yet the bugle never sounded, and therefore the sleepers were not called from their lairs. It was found, likewise, that arrangements which could not be completed till the last moment required more time to carry through than had been anticipated; and the consequence was that noon on the 11th was near at hand ere the march began. But when begun it was conducted in the best possible order. There might be fewer comforts in anticipation, because of the falling off in the extent of the baggage-train; but while the march lasted the division learned to understand that the less of baggage there is with an army on the move, the more pliable and therefore the more efficient the army is. A few shots exchanged between the rear-guard and a body of Afghans which followed them was the only manifestation given that they were passing through an unfriendly country; and when the halt took place at Futtehabad, it was found that no list, either of killed or wounded, remained to be made up.

The column did not reach its ground till after sunset, for the space traversed fell little short of fourteen miles; and the arrangements for passing the night were soon made. Songas, with large fires burning near them, supplied the place of tents. But not yet had the hum of conversation ceased in the bivouac, when two or three tent-pitchers came running in from the rear, with tidings that the cantonments had been attacked immediately on the departure of the brigade, and that the Shah's Janbazees (cavalry) had joined the enemy. A considerable sensation was produced, as may be supposed, on the receipt of this intelligence: nor had it begun to subside when, through the darkness, the sound as of a column advancing was heard; and the piquets stood to their arms. By and by a body of men were discerned, on whom the sappers—for they chanced to form the outpost that seemed threatened—opened a heavy fire; and it was not suppressed without considerable difficulty, though the people fired upon made no return. At length, however, the firing was

stopped; and an interchange of salutations in the English language informed the officer on duty that the intruders came as friends, and not as enemies. A way was forthwith made for them within the lines. They proved to be the Khyberree battalion, who had stood by their European officers in spite of the defection of the Janbazees; and who, after defending the cantonments till treason left them hopeless of doing so effectually, had marched after the division, bringing with them only their arms, and such ammunition as they could carry in their pouches. All the heavy baggage thus fell into the enemy's hands, as well as two six-pounder guns, which the Khyberrees found it impossible to transport with them; and everything which the plunderers did not care to appropriate was, with the cantonments themselves, committed to the flames.

Bad tidings were these for Sale and his men. They confirmed the suspicion which had arisen among them, that matters could not be going on at Cabul so favourably as the chief from Jugdulluck had represented; and left them nothing to look for, throughout the remainder of their progress, except hard knocks. No man's heart failed him, however, nor was any thought entertained, except of winning and holding Jellalabad as long as it might be judged advisable to do so. Wherefore, sharing their fires with the new comers, the troops lay down again, and slept, well guarded by their outposts, till about six o'clock on the following morning, when the word was passed to rouse and take their places.

The dawn had not broken when the troops stood to their arms, and it was still grey twilight when the line of march was formed; but, for obvious reasons, there was no purpose of quitting the ground till there should be light enough to discern objects at a good half-mile's distance. Men stood in the ranks, therefore, and gazed into the sky; till, as the morning brightened, other objects, to the full as exciting, arrested their attention. They looked to the hills, by which a good way off the site of the encampment was girdled in, and saw that those behind, as well as on the right and left, were covered with Afghans. There had been no such gathering of mountaineers at any other stage in their progress; and the spirit which actuated them was soon made manifest by the dropping of long shots into the very bivouac.

"We shall have warm work presently," said one to another, particularly among the companies which formed the rear-guard; and warm work sure enough they had: for scarcely had the column moved off—the baggage under its escort making ready to follow—when down from the heights on the right and left rushed the enemy, while a cloud of people coming up from behind soon formed the arc of the bow; and the whole opened upon the handful of brave men that faced them a very storm of fire.

It was beautiful to witness the coolness and perfect order with which the rear-guard, commanded that day by Lieut.-Colonel Dennie, offered a front to the assailants in every direction. The road running amid frequent declivities offered good cover for the parties which held it; while the piquets on either flank extended and maintained a sharp skirmish among the rocks. They were fed, too, with great judgment, as often as they seemed in danger of being overpowered; and Captain Oldfield, with his squadron, never lost an opportunity of dashing at such of the Afghans as ventured to descend into the low ground, and pushing them back again to the mountains. Thus, fighting in a sort of semicircle, in loose order, but with full reliance on one another, some three hundred men kept as many thousands at bay; never giving ground except for a moment, and then only to recover it again, till the well-known bugle-call, begun near the bivouac, and taken up from point to point round the valley, warned them to move on.

The object of this standing skirmish was to cover the march of the baggage animals, which moved in safety behind the flanking piquets, and gradually passed out of danger. Then, and not till then, the rear-guard took ground in the same direction, preserving its order intact, however, and taking advantage of every rock, stone, and undulation of the ground to give its fire effectively, and thus to keep the pursuers at a distance. And so the affair proceeded for about four miles. But here a village presented itself, upon which the hills closed in on either side; and to get them through the gorge as speedily as possible became with Colonel Dennie an object of paramount importance. Moreover, having reconnoitred the country beyond, and seeing that it was open and convenient for cavalry, he determined to conduct

the operation in such a manner as might inspire the Afghans with an overweening confidence, and thus lure them to their destruction. He therefore directed the cavalry to pass through at a hand-gallop, and to form up in line under cover of a shoulder of one of the hills, so that they might be in a condition to act with effect should events befal as he anticipated. The bugles then sounded for the infantry, first to halt, then to advance firing, and lastly, when the enemy as usual were fleeing before them, to face about, and run with all speed through the village and the enclosures round it. Everything was done with the accuracy of a parade manœuvre; and the results, as regarded the Afghans, fulfilled Dennie's expectations. They did not at first seem to understand what the Feringhees were about. They halted, indeed, soon after the onward rush of the rear-guard had ceased; but were manifestly at a loss what to do when they saw the very men, who but a moment before had chased them with the eagerness of conquerors, running as if for life, when there was no man in pursuit of them. By degrees they recovered their self-possession; and then, as if impressed with the conviction that they had achieved a great victory, they set up one of their fiendish howls, and followed helter-skelter. It was precisely the movement for which Colonel Dennie had made his arrangements. On rushed the Afghans in a dense throng, leaving village, and broken ground, and finally the gorge of the pass behind them, and away over the open valley, their whole souls, as it appeared, being intent on the destruction of the escort and the plunder of the baggage. But scarcely were they clear of the spurs of the two hills, which form, as it were, the horns of the crescent, ere Captain Oldfield's cavalry, bringing their right shoulders up, gave the spur to their chargers and were among them. At the same time a rasselah of Anderson's irregular horse, which Sir Robert Sale, observing the nature of the country as he passed, had sent back, fell upon them from the opposite side; and the slaughter was tremendous. Not once, since the commencement of the march from Bootkak, had the Afghans received such a lesson. The sappers, whom Dennie had formed to support the cavalry, joined also in the charge; and, following the fugitives, who took to the mountains, slew them in great numbers. It was said of the British horsemen that day, that their right arms were

wearied with the blows which they struck; and the quantity of dead that might be seen scattered over the face of the valley proved that they had not struck at random.

From that time, till it arrived within three miles of Jellalabad, the rear-guard sustained no annoyance whatever. The enemy seemed to have become satisfied all at once that, though retiring, Sir Robert Sale's little army was not defeated; and they therefore contented themselves with following at so respectful a distance that no exchange of shots could take place. Indeed, ten miles of way in an open country, and over a continuous descent, offered few facilities for the sort of warfare in which they were the most skilful; and when the road, at the termination of these, became again difficult and contracted, they appeared very little disposed to take advantage of it. Once, and only once, led on by some of the Janbazees who had deserted at Gundamuck, they advanced within very long range and began to fire. But their shot did not tell; and Colonel Dennie, in consequence, without pausing to return it, marched on. He halted, indeed, and formed up as soon as the broken ground was cleared, offering them battle, should they be disposed to accept it. But no such humour was present with them. Wherefore the rear-guard, following in the footsteps of their comrades who had gone before, moved on, till, without the occurrence of any other adventure, they arrived at Jellalabad.

CHAPTER XV.

Jellalabad—Conflagrations at Night—Sortie in the Morning.

JELLALABAD, the winter-residence of the kings of Cabul since the Doorannee empire became consolidated, is situated in a valley of considerable extent, and of great comparative beauty and fertility. It is the capital of a province which stretches west and east from the Kotah of Jugdulluck to the mouth of the Khyber pass; and north and south from the hills which intervene between it and Kafristan, to the Safed Koh, which shuts it out from Khuram. The valley itself may measure about eight-and-twenty miles in length, with an average breadth of three or four miles; and is, especially towards the Khyber extremity, in a high state of cultivation. Besides numerous lesser streams, three considerable rivers adorn and fertilise it; namely, the Cabul river, which flows near the town; the Surkh Rud, or Red River, which joins the main river at a place called Darmita; and the Kara-Su, or Black River, which a little east of Bala Bagh unites with the Surkh Rud. Between Bala Bagh (a town of some importance) and Jellalabad numerous castles and villages intervene. The face of the valley, moreover, in that direction, is well wooded with forest-trees; and the scenery, closed in on all sides by magnificent mountain-ranges, is attractive in the extreme. But immediately around Jellalabad itself an arid desert spreads. This, to persons accustomed to European arrangements, may seem a strange peculiarity in the disposition of a town which, because of the comparative salubrity of its climate, had been chosen as the winter-residence of the court; yet in the East it is not uncommon: for all that the prince seeks in such places is exemption from the intense cold of a higher latitude; and a sandy plain is more likely to afford this than a rich valley, intersected by water-courses, and therefore inviting frost, so to speak, or filling the air with damp exhalations.

The town, originally a place next in importance only to

Candahar and Cabul, had, through the ravages of war and the operation of other causes, fallen in 1841 into complete decay. It seemed, indeed, as if at intervals there had been some political necessity for curtailing its *enceinte*, for not fewer than three distinct circles of ramparts, all broken down, might be traced; and the town itself, little better than a ruin, stood within the innermost of them. Like other Afghan cities of note, Jellalabad had its Balla Hissar: half palace, half citadel. But the Balla Hissar in the present instance, instead of standing apart from the town, as at Cabul, stood in the heart of it; forming with its bare walls a sort of innermost town of all, and furnishing but indifferent accommodation to such as might be in the habit of dwelling there.

Uninviting to the gaze of the ordinary traveller as this dilapidated city might have appeared, to the eyes of the brave but sorely harassed handful of troops who, on the 12th of November, 1841, approached it weary and foot-sore, it offered many and great attractions. They had been accustomed to think of it amid watchings and battles as a place of at least temporary rest; and now, in spite of the unfavourable turn which things seemed to have taken around them, they still hoped to find there repose from their toil. Not so was it with the natives. They seem never to have calculated on so bold a measure as the occupation of Jellalabad by Sale's brigade. They believed that the Feringhees were on their march to their own polluted country; and hence every village, which the force approached and passed, sent out its armed men, more or less numerous, to assist in harassing the unbelievers. Wherefore, when, instead of encamping in the open fields, with a view of renewing his march on the morrow, Sir Robert Sale turned the head of his column towards the nearest city gate, the astonishment both of the dwellers in the town, and of the inhabitants of the villages near it, seemed to deprive them of all self-possession. As many of the citizens as could escape, fled through the opposite gates, without making so much as a show of resistance; and thus the place was won, and whatever stores both of provisions and ammunition might happen to be deposited there, fell into the hands of the brigade, without so much as a musket-shot having been fired.

It was high time that the troops should reach this or some

other place of temporary relaxation. The stock of provisions in hand being taken account of, was found to suffice for no more than two days' consumption, and how to obtain a supply seemed, when the subject came to be maturely considered, a matter by no means easy of adjustment. There was neither difficulty nor any hesitation in putting all ranks upon half rations; and all ranks, whether soldiers or civilians, prepared to contract their appetites without a murmur. But pinch as they might, two days' provisions held out but a slender prospect of existence to people begirt, as was this gallant little force, by barbarous enemies. For scarcely were they within the walls, when swarms of Afghans appeared on every side, surrounding the town, and uttering yells and cries, discordant and loud enough to awaken the dead. Moreover, under cover of the many broken parapets and buildings of various sorts, which abutted upon the place, stragglers approached within ear-shot of the sentries, and vented their fury in all manner of threats, which they professed themselves determined to execute, unless the town were abandoned. And as the city wall was full of breaches, and had no ditch before it such as deserved the name, serious apprehensions were entertained lest, after dark, they might endeavour to force their way into the town by mere weight of numbers. To provide against this every necessary precaution was taken. Guards were planted at each of the gates, which gave sentries enough to communicate at short intervals round the whole of the circuit; while in a sort of square or place in the centre of the town, whence streets passed off to the several outlets, a strong piquet was planted, with orders to send support to every point where there should be heavy firing or other evidence of hostile operations. The rest of the little army was kept well in hand, the men lying down by companies, having their officers near them; and all slept accoutred, with their weapons near, so that they might be ready to turn out and defend themselves at a moment's warning.

While the troops, after eating a scanty meal, found in sleep the refreshment of which they stood sorely in need, the commandants of corps, with Sir Robert Sale at their head, met to consider as to the steps which it would be judicious to take amid the remarkable circumstances by which they were sur-

rounded. There were no differences of opinion in regard to the necessity which had arisen of holding their ground where they were, till orders from head-quarters should reach them; but a question presented itself as to whether it would be better to keep possession of the whole of the town, or retire within the citadel, and there maintain themselves. They who argued for this latter course pointed out that the town, were it even in a defensible state, was too extensive for their force; and that so far was it from being defensible, that the whole of the bastions were in ruins, the curtains themselves being pierced by various breaches. Now the citadel, or Balla Hissar, though most imperfectly fortified, was at all events encircled by a wall; and, offering more than sufficient accommodation for the troops, might be held with a considerable saving of watchfulness and consequent exhaustion, by a garrison well concentrated, and therefore effective in all emergencies. It is said, I know not how truly, that at first the leanings of the council of war were decidedly in that direction. But a wiser policy prevailed in the end. Voices explained, that by giving up the town you made a virtual acknowledgment of weakness, which in the presence of a barbarous enemy is especially to be deprecated; and that any advantage which might be gained by a concentration of your strength would be more than counterbalanced by the cover which the assailants would find among the houses, and through the lanes and streets that were abandoned to them. It is but justice to the memory of the brave and somewhat ill-used Dennie to explain that of the latter opinion he was the chief advocate; and well was it for the "illustrious garrison" that, after a good deal of discussion, it prevailed.

Having settled this point, the next course resolved upon was, that no time ought to be lost in putting the defences of the town in the most perfect state of which they might appear capable. To set about an operation so delicate, however, in the face of the armed hordes which swarmed in the neighbourhood, was felt to be impracticable; and a determination was therefore come to of hazarding a sally on the following day, and driving them to a distance. And this was the more necessary, that from the summits of certain rising grounds, particularly from a rocky hill on the southern face of the town, they managed to annoy the garrison, and to put the lives of the sentries in jeopardy, by a con-

tinual fire of matchlocks. Accordingly, the brigade orderly-book of that night contained instructions that a sally should take place on the following morning through the southern gate; that Lieut.-Colonel Monteith, C.B., 35th Native Infantry, should command; that he should have under his orders three hundred men of the 13th, three hundred of the 35th, one hundred sappers, the whole of the cavalry, two guns of Abbott's battery, and a body of Jezalchees; and that after sweeping the enemy from the heights, whence they contrived to make themselves troublesome, he should return into the city by a different gate.

In no respect does the conduct of regular and disciplined troops contrast more remarkably with that of raw levies, than in this,—that the care which the former take to destroy nothing which may hold out the prospect of shelter to themselves is exceeded only by their anxiety to cut down the shelter of an enemy. Raw levies, on the other hand, seem impelled by sheer excitement to perpetrate mischief; and this night the strength of the impulse on the Afghans was illustrated, by the wantonness with which they set fire to every house and shed to which, as they lay without the walls of the town, they could gain access. The British troops, from their billets and quarters in the city, looked abroad upon a sheet of flame, which was fed by habitations which the enemy, had they been prudent, would have sought to protect, and the besieged made it their business, on the first convenient opportunity, to destroy. Yet the incendiaries, so far from seeming to regret the outrage which they had committed, manifestly rejoiced in it. The sentries on the walls saw groups of them dancing round each conflagration like demons. They heard also the wild shouts amid which the savages continued throughout the whole night to multiply their execrations and threats of torture to the unbelievers; and which they ceased to pour forth only after the flames had consumed all the material that they found to feed upon. And then there was a profound silence: for the Afghan, though he frequently indulges in night attacks, or, as he calls them, chapoas, seems to have no relish for fighting through the hour before dawn, which, among the soldiers of European armies, is generally considered the most suitable for the commencement of a fray. On the contrary, it is then that, wearied with his nocturnal operations, he seems on all occasions

to sleep the most soundly, and is, in consequence, the most exposed to the sort of rousing which Sir Robert Sale had determined to administer to him.

Where a field of operations is strange to one of two parties, and the other may be assumed to be familiarly acquainted with all its features, the former, if undertaking an offensive operation, will take care to set about it in broad day. Acting upon this principle, Sir Robert Sale kept his columns of sortie in hand till the sun was fully risen; and thus enabled Colonel Monteith, to whom the privilege of leading had been entrusted, to survey accurately and carefully the ground on which he was about to act. He looked down from the flat roof of one of the loftiest of the houses upon a plain, varied here and there with gardens and other enclosures, some of which came near to the Cabul gate, and were dotted with castles, of which they seem to form the pleasure-grounds. He saw likewise, where, in another direction, at the distance of perhaps a quarter of a mile from the wall, the river poured its waters, and, turning round, examined the hills towards the south, which commanded the town completely, though at a considerable range. The hills, as well as the gardens and the flat country beyond, were crowded with Afghans. There could not be fewer than five thousand warriors at the least; and, in spite of the entire absence of discipline, according to the European sense of that term, which characterized them, they presented a formidable appearance, being stout men and well armed. All the various features in the scene, as well as the dispositions which the enemy had made for the purpose of turning them to account, Colonel Monteith took time to examine; and then he proceeded in a soldier-like manner to perform the duty which was required of him.

The total amount of force put under his orders fell somewhat short of eleven hundred men; and of these only three hundred and fifty were Europeans. Above seven hundred, including the ordinary guards and piquets, remained for the defence of the place, so that the operation, however agreeable to the ordinary course of things, could not but be regarded as a critical one. The slightest reverse, it was felt, would tell; and if by chance more than a reverse were to befal, the consequences must be serious. Wherefore every precaution, which circumstances ap-

peared to suggest, were adopted to prevent disaster. The troops within the town stood to their arms. All the artillery, with the exception of the pieces which had been told off for service, were ranged along the walls, so as to cover the advance of the sortie; and opened their fire as soon as word was passed that the march was about to begin. Yet though the practice was excellent, and men and horses went down beneath it, the enemy gave no ground till the leading companies rushed out, and closed upon them with a sharp and rapid storm of musketry.

There was an enclosure outside the town, with a mansion-house and other buildings in the midst of it, to which, because Sir William Macnaghten had dwelt there during the residence, in the previous winter, of Shah Shujah's court at Jellalabad, the name of the Mission Compound had been given. There the Khyberree regiment, "faithful among the faithless found," had passed the night; and now the enemy, as if in anticipation of a movement on the side of the garrison, attacked it with great fury. The Khyberrees fought well; but were forced to give way, till the cavalry, issuing from the nearest gate, fell upon the assailants, and cut them down in great numbers. It so happened, also, that the gallant squadron of the 5th were brought into collision with the Janbazees, who had betrayed their trust at Gundamuck; and though the latter offered a stout resistance, they went down like nine-pins before the charge. Meanwhile the infantry, passing through the Cabul gate, advanced towards the hills. They were thronged with defenders, who kept up a heavy but not very effective fire; and among them was a piper, who ceased not to play upon his most unmusical instrument, regardless of the shower of balls that whistled past him. As a matter of course the piper became the subject of many a rude joke among the men of the 13th. They laughed while they took deliberate aim at him, showing, however, this much of respect to his acknowledged bravery, that in honour of him they forthwith denominated the heights "The Piper's Hill." And I do not doubt that a name, which it received during this memorable struggle, the rock still retains, even among the Afghans. It is right to add, that the piper escaped unhurt.

There was a panic among the Afghans in all quarters. The cavalry, breaking out of the enclosures, fell upon them, thronged

together in the plain, and hewed them down. The infantry, after pushing the occupants of the hills from their vantage-ground, hung upon their rear, till they fled outright. They were pursued as far as the nearest of the forts, into which the victors forced their way, securing—an acceptable reward of their gallantry—the small stock of grain which it contained. And now, seeing that the purposes of the sortie had been accomplished to the utmost extent of men's wishes, the bugles sounded the recall. Slowly, and with apparent reluctance, the victorious troops obeyed the summons. By twos and threes the skirmishers closed upon the centre, and marched back to take their places with the supporting column; and the whole returned in great spirits within the city. As to the enemy, not a trace of them could be discovered as far as the eye reached. About two hundred dead bodies scattered over the plain told where they had lately been; but of living warriors not one remained to annoy, even with threats and abusive language, the gallant garrison of Jellalabad.

CHAPTER XVI.

Continuance of the Blockade.

FROM the date of this successful sally up to the 28th of November, the garrison sustained no serious molestation. An opportunity was thus afforded, of which Sir Robert Sale made excellent use, to strengthen his position, and to lay in such a stock of provisions as might enable him to hold his ground till it should be judged expedient to shift it. In order to accomplish the former of these objects, strong working-parties were employed from morning till night in filling up the breaches in the town walls, and clearing out and deepening the ditches in part of them. Every tree, likewise, which stood in the line of fire was cut down; every wall and house and inequality in the ground levelled; while the forts or towers which in several directions came close in upon what had been the suburbs, had their near walls beaten down, so as to render them untenable by an enemy. In like manner parapets were run up along the ramparts, sand-bags and the saddles of the baggage animals being used in their construction; and finally, ten pieces of cannon, of various calibre, and in some instances mounted on strange carriages, with one or two mortars, were run into the bastions, and equipped for service. Meanwhile foraging parties went out under sufficient escorts, which gathered in from the villages and homesteads round about all manner of grain, sheep, fuel, and other useful articles. And the consequence was, that within the space of a few days, not only had the town become defensible against such an enemy as was likely to assail it, but the commissary, on taking account of his stock, satisfied himself that there was provision enough for a month's consumption at the rate then in use, namely, half-rations.

All this was satisfactory: nor perhaps could any one much lament, under the circumstances in which the brigade was placed, that not one drop of spirits remained in store. Undoubtedly there are cases in which ardent spirits, used as a medicine, prove

invaluable. Many a frame, exhausted and sinking, has been sustained by the stimulus of brandy till nature had time to rally; but considered as an article of daily consumption, it is now universally acknowledged that ardent spirits tend only to weaken, not to invigorate, the human constitution. But it is not easy to persuade either soldiers or sailors of this fact; and so long as the English government shall continue to include a certain portion of fire-water in the supplies which it furnishes to its troops, the troops will demand the poison as their right—and get it. And so long as English soldiers are encouraged and invited to regard the habit of drinking spirits as a privilege peculiar to their class, crime, as well as disease, will abound in the army, whether it serve at home or abroad. In Jellalabad, however, there were no spirits, nor could any of the places round about supply them: and the consequence was, that throughout the continuance of this siege there was no crime, no sickness, except from wounds,—the highest courage, the very best humour, and a docility and quickness such as had never before been noticed, even in the 13th Light Infantry, remarkable as that fine regiment had long been for all the qualities which combine to form the character of a really efficient corps.

From the 14th to the 28th of November, the garrison of Jellalabad sustained no serious molestation by the attacks of the enemy. Parties of Afghans hung about the place all this while, and at night the sentries on the walls were frequently fired at; while from time to time a rumour spread abroad, which put both men and officers on the alert. For example, a report would come in over-night that the working-parties were to be attacked as soon as they passed beyond the walls on the morrow: and a strong covering party was directed in consequence to precede them, and to patrol round the place, in order to guard against the hazard. On another occasion the foragers would be threatened, perhaps molested: whereupon the nearest guard or piquet would seize their weapons and run to the rescue; or the cavalry sally forth, and with its accustomed bravery and skill, dash at twice or thrice its own numbers, and sweep them away. But no affair of importance took place; neither were any valuable lives wasted. One circumstance, indeed, created a good deal of uneasiness in the minds of those to whom it was known. On taking account of

the musket ammunition, the alarming discovery was made, that, including what the men carried in their pouches, not more than one hundred and twenty rounds per head remained. Nevertheless, no human being dreamed of desponding; indeed, the only measure which brave men so circumstanced could adopt was adopted; an order being issued that the greatest care should be taken not to throw away a shot, and therefore never to fire, except in an extremity, and then only when sure of doing so with effect.

Jellalabad was now fairly in a state of siege. The communications with both Cabul and Peshawur, though not entirely cut off, were become so insecure, that intelligence from either place reached the garrison but rarely; and, except when brought by messengers hired to conceal written billets about their persons, could not always be depended upon. On the 15th, for example, tidings arrived of a great success at Cabul, and the same evening a salute of twenty-one guns was fired in honour of the victory. But scarcely had the echoes died away among the mountains, ere news of revolts and disasters in other quarters spread abroad. It was ascertained beyond doubt, that a post at Besh-i-bolak, about twenty-five miles on the Peshawur road—which Captain Ferrirs, with a Jezalchee corps, had hitherto maintained—was forced; and Ferrirs with his men were described as retreating upon Peshawur. By and by, cossids (messengers) brought information, that the whole of the road between Bootkak and Gundamuck was blocked; that the enemy had established posts at every favourable point; and that elsewhere, from the one extremity of Afghanistan to the other, the population was in arms. Then followed tales of more battles, disastrous to the English; of the shutting-up of Shah Shujah in the Balla Hissar, and of the British army in its cantonments; of the blockade of Ghuznee, Candahar, and indeed of every post and fortress into which the English had thrown a garrison. It was impossible to say how much of importance deserved to be attached to these rumours; though some of them, particularly such as described the death or the wounds of individuals, carried with them a great air of truth. But the general effect was more and more to satisfy Sale and his followers, that, as far as their immediate safety stood affected, they must trust to the protection of Providence and

their own right hands: and not a man among them seemed to desire any better guarantee for the attainment of this end, important as they all felt it to be.

For two or three days there had been a whisper in Jellalabad that the repose which the garrison enjoyed from hostile operations would soon be interrupted. More than once cautions were given to the officers on guard at the gates to be upon the alert, and the infantry slept accoutred in their quarters; the cavalry, with their horses saddled, near them. This was particularly the case during the nights of the 27th and 28th; indeed, dropping shots, which whistled by the sentries, told, that whether in large numbers or in small, an enemy was certainly near; but on the morning of the 29th all doubts were removed. There were seen advancing from the side of Cabul dense columns of men, of which the numbers were guessed not to fall short of four or five thousand, while in front of them moved a cloud of skirmishers, who, penetrating as far as the broken ground near the river side, opened a desultory fire upon the place. The garrison stood to its arms, of course: but observing that the main body showed no design of hazarding an assault; that it rather spread itself round the town, occupying a number of forts about a mile and a half distant, and taking possession of the Piper's Hill, Sir Robert Sale contented himself with abiding in a state of preparedness, and kept his troops in hand. The consequence was, that throughout that, and for two or three days succeeding it, almost all the noise and show of fighting was on the side of the Afghans. For the British troops, mindful of the caution which they had received, reserved their musketry fire with admirable coolness, and answered the enemy only with an occasional cannon shot, of which, happily for themselves, they possessed a good store.

So passed the interval between the 29th of November and the 1st of December. The enemy, encouraged by the apparent supineness of the garrison, grew from hour to hour more bold, throwing his skirmishers continually nearer to the walls, and putting an entire stop to the operations of the working parties, till at last Sir Robert Sale determined to give them a lesson; and a force, consisting of the cavalry, two nine-pounder guns, and three hundred men from each of the infantry regiments, was placed

under the command of Colonel Dennie, and desired to clear them off. It was about one o'clock in the day when Colonel Dennie received his instructions; and having waited till his men had eaten their noontide meal, he sallied forth. The cheer of the soldiers rang through the air, and seemed to produce a great effect upon the Afghans. Their scattered parties ran together, formed up in a rude line, and, as soon as the head of the column appeared through the gateway, fired a volley. It was perfectly harmless, and can hardly be said to have been repeated, for the people who gave it broke and fled, our troops rushing after them at the top of their speed. The guns, also, were unlimbered, and poured grape with murderous accuracy among the fugitives; while the cavalry, striking spurs into their horses, dashed among the throng, and struck their blows, to the right and left, with excellent will. Never was rout more complete. The enemy, scattered in all directions, some fleeing across the plains, others making for the river, into which repeated charges of the cavalry forced them; while the infantry, making no pause, carried the hills at the point of the bayonet. About one hundred and fifty of the besiegers fell on that day, without the loss to the troops employed against them of a single one. And when the dawn of the morrow came in, it was ascertained that the forts which the main body had occupied were deserted, and that the whole of the enormous masses which came up on the 29th, with such a show of resolution, were dissolved and gone, nobody could tell whither.

A long interval of comparative repose ensued, after this brilliant sortie, to the garrison of Jellalabad. It was occupied, as similar periods of time had been before, in strengthening the works, and adding to the stock of provisions; men's minds being kept all the while in a state of excitement—not always of a pleasurable nature—by the rumours of battle and disaster which came in from Cabul: for the truth began by degrees to ooze out. The murder of Sir Alexander Burnes and his friends, and slender guard, was already an acknowledged fact. So was the unaccountable blunder which had permitted the commissariat fort at Cabul, with all its valuable contents, to fall into the hands of the enemy. And there now came in details, more or less accurate, of the ill-directed attack upon the Rekabashee fort, where Colonel Shelton's brigade somewhat misconducted itself; and

Colonel Mackerell, with other valuable officers, was slain. By and by an indistinct narrative of the disasters of the detachment stationed in the Nijrow valley began to circulate. The murder of Lieutenant Rattray, assistant political agent there, much aggravated the sufferings of his brother of the 13th Light Infantry, who still lay sick with the wound which he had received in the affair of Jugdulluck; and it tended in no respect to raise either his spirits or the spirits of his comrades, when authentic intelligence of the destruction of the whole force, with the exception of Major Pottinger and Lieutenant Houghton, both of whom had been previously wounded, reached them. Thus, from day to day, tidings disastrous and humiliating poured in upon this handful of brave men. For though they heard that a brigade had marched from Candahar for the purpose of forcing its way to Cabul, and bringing relief to the beleaguered garrison, no intelligence of its arrival reached them; and it soon came out that the relieving force had found the passes too strictly guarded, and had been obliged to retrace its steps, and seek safety within the walls of the old capital.

It is impossible for those who have not themselves had personal experience of the matter to enter into or understand the feelings of men situated as were at this time Sir Robert Sale and his followers. Isolated in a country where every human being was their enemy, or prepared to become such on the first appearance of weakness on their part; having no hope of relief from their comrades whom they had quitted, and as little that an armed force from the provinces would come to succour them; without supplies of any sort, except such as they could procure for themselves; and above all, knowing that one protracted and desperate battle would leave them, whether victorious or beaten, without a round of musket-ammunition wherewith to defend their lives, they would have been either more or less than men had not anxiety weighed upon their spirits. Moreover, it is marvellous with what effect rumours, whether sinister or the reverse, tell when circulated among people in their plight. Eager to believe the best, yet with natural waywardness distrustful both of their informants and of their own wishes, they receive the many and contradictory tales which reach them with a strange mixture of feeling. But when upon the 17th a mes-

senger came in, and Sir Robert Sale, having read the despatch, put it into his pocket and made no mention of its contents, men's surmises became more dark, because more vague, than ever; and though each, when questioned, could give no good authority for what he said, there was scarcely an individual in the place whose mouth was not filled with tales of disaster. At last the rumour began to circulate that the British army in Cabul had capitulated, and that Sir William Macnaghten had agreed to evacuate Afghanistan on condition that their march to the provinces should be unmolested. No words can describe the sensation which this rumour, in whatever source originating, created. Shame, sorrow, indignation, were the feelings uppermost in every man's heart; and the speech of all was strongly tinctured with the tone which such feelings give. The result was, that the garrison of Jellalabad came, as if by common consent, to the conclusion that there could be no truth whatever in the story. "They may have mismanaged their business,—that is very probable; they may have sustained great loss, and have before them the prospect of much suffering and many privations; but to tell us that they have capitulated—the thing is out of the question." So argued these gallant fellows, judging of others from themselves; and then dismissing all uneasy thoughts, as far as it was possible so to do, from their minds, they returned to their daily tasks of working, and foraging, and laying in stores of every kind, with all the zeal and good humour which had characterised their proceedings from the outset.

CHAPTER XVII.

Bad News—Arrival of Dr. Brydon—His Narrative.

So passed the latter months of 1841. They had been pregnant with events of very deep moment to every individual in the brigade: yet the progress of time soon showed that other and still more startling incidents were to be born of them. January, 1842, came in with frightful tidings in his hand. The officers of the garrison had celebrated Christmas Day, first by reverently attending divine worship, and then by dining together after the custom of their country, and remembering in their talk the friends and relatives whom they might never perhaps see again. Their beverage was water; yet they drank it to the healths of many far away, and were as happy, with a sobered joy, as they could expect to be apart from the society of those dearest to them. And here let me not forget to record to the honour of the illustrious garrison, that regularly as the Lord's Day came round, brigade orders called both officers and men together, that in his own name and in the names of his comrades, one of themselves might present to their Father which is in heaven their common sacrifice of prayer and praise. It was a righteous custom, and produced upon all concerned the happiest effect. It sobered while it encouraged all, from the highest to the lowest, teaching them to feel that the lives of the brave are in the hands of Him who gave them; and that the best preparation which men can make for battle and for death comes out of a humble yet hopeful reliance on the mercy, as well as on the power, of the Most High. Nor do I think that I go beyond the line of sober truth if to the prevalence of this right feeling among them, aided by the happy absence of that bane of a soldier's usefulness, spirituous liquors, and the encouraged use of them, I attribute the patience, the good-humour, the unwearied zeal, which from the beginning to the end of the siege characterised the behaviour of all classes, and rendered the garrison of Jellalabad, though few in number,

invincible. Had the same tempers prevailed at Cabul, and the same wisdom been exhibited in the encouragement of them, who can doubt that the fate of General Elphinstone's corps would have been different?

New Year's Day, 1842, is marked in a journal which lies before me with two emphatic words, "All quiet." Their meaning is, that no shots were fired, that no enemy showed himself, that no untoward rumours occurred to disturb the equanimity of the garrison, and that within the walls and without things held their accustomed course. Quiet, in a besieged city, is a state of things which has no existence; for the spade and the pickaxe are at work continually; and guards are watchful, and sentinels much on the alert, whether there be any visible object of suspicion near them or the reverse. On the 1st of January, precisely as on other days, the routine of life went on; and from hour to hour the defences of the place became more formidable. But the 2nd brought with it ample ground of uneasiness and alarm. A letter from Major Pottinger announced that Sir William Macnaghten was murdered; and described, hurriedly, the terrible results that ensued from that act of treason. And while men yet held their breath through horror of such tidings, another messenger brought word that the Candahar brigade had been stopped by the snow, and fallen back again after having penetrated as far as Ghuznee. Finally, a despatch from Akbar Khan to one of the chiefs in the neighbourhood was intercepted and brought in; from which Captain M'Gregor learned that a holy war was proclaimed; and that all believers were adjured, in the name of the Prophet, to rise against the infidels, "whose chief," continued this memorable despatch, "I have slain with mine own hand, as you, I trust, will in like manner slay the chief of the Feringhees in Jellalabad."

There was horror and extreme indignation among those who listened to these recitals; but not one pulse beat the more hurriedly. They felt, indeed, more and more, that their lives were in their own keeping; for they who had murdered the envoy while sitting with them in friendly conference, breaking through their national respect for the rites of hospitality, and violating the sanctity that in all lands attaches to the person and character of an ambassador, were not likely to spare the lives of soldiers

who had resisted them so long and so daringly. The little conclave therefore broke up, the determination of its members being additionally strengthened; and forth, as usual, went foragers on the prowl, and grass-cutters to provide food for the horses and camels. No great while elapsed, moreover, ere signs of a coming storm began to show themselves. Parties of armed men were seen, now at a distance, now hovering about the place; and on the 7th one of these fell upon the cavalry grass-cutters, and ere assistance could be sent slew three of them. Immediately horsemen of the 5th cavalry rode to the rescue; but they arrived too late, and brought back with them two out of the three headless trunks of their unlucky attendants. The poor fellows were buried within the ditch; and care was taken not to trust any more of their number abroad, except a sufficient escort attended them.

The 8th of January passed somewhat in gloom. Hopes had been entertained that ere this something would have been heard of the force from Peshawur; which was understood to have been warned for a march up the country, but of the coming of which no signs appeared. The 9th was rendered memorable by the unexpected arrival before the town of a small band of horsemen, bearers of a flag of truce, and messengers, as to the officer on guard they described themselves to be, from Cabul. They were conducted into the presence of Sir Robert Sale, and produced a letter, written in English, and subscribed with General Elphinstone's name. It contained the announcement that between the writer and Akbar Khan a convention had been established, whereby General Elphinstone had agreed to evacuate the country, and that the evacuation was to begin from Jellalabad. The garrison was accordingly directed to march immediately, with its arms, stores, and ammunition, for Peshawur; because the force in Cabul had agreed not to commence its movement towards the provinces, till it should have been assured that General Sale and his people were beyond the frontier. "Everything," continued this remarkable despatch, "has been done in good faith. You will not be molested on your way; and to the safe-conduct which Akbar Khan has given, I trust for the passage of the troops under my immediate orders through the passes."

There was no mistake here. The document was a genuine document, and the signature that of one with whose handwriting

all were familiar; and the orders were as peremptory as ever came from the head-quarters of an army or a corps. What was to be done? Were such orders, so issued, to be obeyed? A man less resolute than he whose fall on the banks of the Sutlej is yet mourned as a national calamity, would have obeyed such orders at once. There might be risk in the march, but risks soldiers are trained to encounter; and perhaps, if the scales were fairly held, the hazards attending a retreat out of the country might appear less serious than must attend the endeavour to hold on. But Sale had other thoughts in his mind than his own personal peril, or even peril to the lives of his followers. He thought of the honour of his country, and of the wisdom, in a political point of view, of not abandoning altogether the fruits of the triumphs of 1839; and, full of these convictions, he called together the commandants of his several corps, and the heads of the several departments which served under him. A sort of council of war was held, in which the same noble spirit that animated Sale was found to prevail. They examined the despatch narrowly; saw that it was dated not fewer than eleven days back; and came to the resolution "that it would not be prudent to act upon such a document; and that the garrison would therefore abide where it was till further orders."

It would have been idle to think of concealing from the troops the contents of the communication which had reached the general. Nobody, indeed, seems to have thought it necessary to make the attempt; for the men were as resolute as the officers; and both classes held up their hands in amazement when the capitulation of five thousand disciplined soldiers to any conceivable number of barbarians was announced to them as an affair accomplished. Moreover, the men were ready either to march or abide where they were, according as those to whom they looked for guidance should judge expedient; and when the latter and wiser determination was announced to them, they received it with a cheer, and turned to their work with renewed alacrity. Probably the annals of war offer few parallels to the state of discipline and mutual confidence in each other to which this handful of brave men—Asiatics equally with Europeans—had been brought. The men believed that their officers would always decide wisely for them. The officers believed that the men would accomplish

whatever they were desired to attempt; and the consequence was that, amid dangers and difficulties of the most trying kind, the spirits of both classes kept up.

For some days previously there had been considerable uneasiness, because of the lack of information from Peshawur. Hitherto, though neither troops nor stores came from that quarter, communications in writing had been pretty regularly sent in; and more than once the commandant or political agent had managed to convey to General Sale a supply of money. The money was well used in bribing certain chiefs and heads of villages in the districts round to send grain, and sheep, and cattle, for the use of the garrison. But latterly no despatches of any kind had arrived; and as the funds at Sale's disposal were exhausted, apprehensions began to be entertained lest supplies should run short. It was therefore a pleasant break in the monotony of their existence when, towards evening on the 11th, forty horsemen, part of the train of Turabas Khan, a friendly chief, sought admittance into the town. They had come from Peshawur by the Lalpoora road, and were the bearers, not only of letters, but of treasure to the amount of twenty-one thousand rupees.

It was something to have received a supply of money. In Afghanistan, as in most other parts of the world, where money happens to be scarce, little service is to be procured; where it is abundant, every man, woman, or child whom you meet is more or less amenable to your bidding. The acquisition of this increase to his slender store gave therefore to Sir Robert Sale an assurance that not yet would he run the risk of being starved into a surrender. But he would have given the whole of the rupees, perhaps the amount twice told, for a moderate supply of musket ammunition; of which the stock, in spite of great care in husbanding and reserving it, was beginning to diminish fast. Moreover, just about this period, as if to fill up the amount of his difficulties, suspicions began for the first time to be entertained regarding the fidelity of the Jezalchees. It did not exactly appear upon what ground these suspicions rested. Nobody could say that he had either seen or heard ought in the behaviour of the men which would justify him in bringing so grave a charge against them, as that they had meditated proceedings hostile to the garrison or were in communication with the enemy. Never-

theless, when a suspicion of the kind contrives by any means to spring up, it is a very difficult matter to get rid of it; and of all the feelings which can affect men circumstanced as at that time were Sale and his brigade, it is hard to conceive any more distressing than the doubt of the trustworthiness of those with whom they are associated.

Working parties busied themselves all day long during the 11th and the 12th in digging a ditch round the bastion on the north-west angle of the town, that being the point on which the acting engineer saw that the place was weakest. They were thus engaged, their arms being piled near them, and the cavalry, with horses saddled, ready to gallop forth to their support, when a little after noon on the 13th, one of the sentries on that part of the wall which faced Gundamuck and the road from Cabul, called aloud that he saw a mounted man in the distance. In a moment glasses were levelled in this direction, and there, sure enough, could be distinguished, leaning rather than sitting upon a miserable pony, a European, faint, as it seemed, from travel, if not sick, or perhaps wounded. It is impossible to describe the sort of thrill which ran through men's veins as they watched the movements of the stranger. Slowly he approached; and strange as it may appear, it is nevertheless true, that Colonel Dennie foretold the nature of the tidings of which he was the bearer: for it is a fact, which every surviving officer of the 13th will vouch for, that almost from the first Colonel Dennie had boded ill of the force left in Cabul; and that subsequently to the receipt of the earliest intelligence which told of the warfare in which they were engaged, and of the disastrous results to which it led, he repeatedly declared his conviction, that to a man the army would be destroyed. His words were, "You 'll see. Not a soul will escape from Cabul except one man; and he will come to tell us that the rest are destroyed." Under such circumstances it is very little to be wondered at, if men's blood curdled while they watched the advance of the solitary horseman; and the voice of Dennie sounded like the response of an oracle, when he exclaimed, "Did I not say so? here comes the messenger."

Colonel Dennie spoke the truth. An escort of cavalry being sent out to meet the traveller, he was brought in bleeding and

faint, and covered with wounds; grasping in his right hand the hilt, and a small fragment of a sword which had broken in the terrible conflict from which he was come. He proved to be Dr. Brydon, whose escape from the scene of slaughter had been marvellous, and who at the moment believed himself to be, and was regarded by others, as the sole survivor of General Elphinstone's once magnificent little army.

The tale of the disastrous retreat from Cabul, and of the frightful massacre of the ill-commanded troops which set forth upon it, has been told too often, and with too much breadth of detail, to permit a repetition of the narrative here. Enough is done when I state, that from the lips of their wounded comrade, as soon as care and wholesome diet had in some degree recovered his strength, the officers of the Jellalabad garrison received an account of all that had befallen, from the fatal blunders which characterised the first endeavours that were made to put down the revolt, up to the signing of the treaty of armistice, and its immediate violation by the Afghan chiefs. Dr. Brydon told how the column set forth, disorganised and cowed at the very beginning of its march; how first the baggage, and by and by the soldiers, were set upon by the enemy that tracked their steps; how they fought their way through the Koord Cabul, some dropping under the fire that was showered upon them from the rocks, others perishing of cold amid the snow which constituted their beds at night. He described the wavering and imbecility of the leaders; the insubordinate conduct of the men; their desperate valour on all occasions, which led, however, to no results, because there was no mind present to direct it wisely; and last of all, the treachery of Akbar Khan, who, enticing the General, with almost all the other officers of rank, into his power, left the wreck of the army without any one to guide it. When matters arrived at this pass there was an end to discipline, to order, and of course to strength. The troops straggled forward by parties as far as Jugdulluck. There, at the end of the narrow ascent, an abattis of prickly pear had been thrown across the road, in their effort to force a way through which multitudes perished. At last, all the sepoys and camp-followers having died, some of cold and fatigue, others by bullets or the sword, a miserable remnant of the 44th regiment, with about

forty European officers, arrived in the vicinity of Gundamuck, having marched all night, and fought a battle for the passage of the river. Here it would seem that some of the officers and the men parted company. About twelve, who were better mounted than the rest, rode on with a few cavalry which had survived the march. One by one they dropped off, till six only remained, and these pulled up to rest for a short space at Futtehabad. It was a fatal measure, into which a treacherous show of kindness by the inhabitants lured them: for while they were yet eating the morsel of bread which had been ostentatiously placed before them, a band of ruffians rushed upon them and cut down two. The other four galloped off, and Dr. Brydon, who was the worst mounted of the whole, soon fell into the rear. His heart failed him, as well it might; so he quitted the road, and concealed himself for a while behind some rocks that offered shelter. But here, the thought occurred that to him there was no safety in delay; so he once more turned his jaded pony into the road, and pushed on. He soon came up with the body of one of his friends, which lay in the middle of the path terribly mutilated; and had not proceeded far beyond it ere an Afghan horseman, armed to the teeth, confronted him. There was nothing for it but to offer the best resistance which the wretched weapon by his side, and the jaded state of his starved horse, might enable him to do. He fought for his life, and in the *melée* his sword broke off by the hilt. Just then he received a wound in the knee, the pain of which caused him to stoop forward; whereupon the Afghan, supposing that he was about to draw a pistol, turned and fled. He rode on, bleeding and weak, yet thankful for the respite from death which had been granted him; and, being soon afterwards espied from the ramparts of Jellalabad, was brought in, as has just been described, to the garrison.

CHAPTER XVIII.

Continued Preparations for Defence—Construction of Corn-mills—Earthquake.

THE horror of those to whom Dr. Brydon told his tale of blood surpasses the power of language to describe. They felt that the work of slaughter must have been long ere this consummated; yet the cavalry were ordered to mount forthwith, and to patrol along the Cabul road to the farthest reach which might seem to be compatible with a regard to their own safety. A good many officers accompanied them; and they had not ridden above four miles from the town ere they came upon the mutilated remains of the three out of Dr. Brydon's four ill-fated companions, of whom he could give no account. Not a straggler, however—not a living soul, man, woman, or child—appeared either there, or as far as the eye could reach beyond. Wherefore the patrol, after lingering about till the shadows began to deepen, turned their horses' heads with sorrow homewards, and rejoined their comrades. That night lanterns were suspended from poles at different points about the ramparts: while from time to time the bugles sounded the advance, in the hope that one or other of these beacons might guide some wanderer to a place of rest. But none came; and though on the morrow, and for several days and nights subsequently, a like course was pursued, not one man, European or native, seemed to be alive—certainly none profited by it.

And now, more than ever convinced that they had but themselves and the hand of Providence to look to, the "illustrious garrison" continued to deepen their ditches, to strengthen their ramparts, and to make every preparation which circumstances would allow for meeting and repelling the fierce attack with which they expected hourly to be favoured. Occasionally a word or look of reproach might perhaps escape them when thoughts of what might have been done had the force from Peshawur come up in time, entered into their minds. They knew, what the bri-

gade stationed at Peshawur probably did not know—that every man capable of bearing arms had been summoned to the war at Cabul, and hence that the Khyber pass was left well nigh destitute of defenders. Had the leader of the Peshawur force been but aware of that fact, he would have probably disregarded whatever cautions reached him from the provinces; and, marching upon Jellalabad, might have given a very different turn to the issues of the strife, or, at the worst, rendered the escape of General Elphinstone and his army certain. But either his ignorance of the real state of the case, or his respect for authority (a great military principle), kept him back, and now it would have been utter madness to think of moving. Accordingly, if a reproachful thought entered by chance into the mind of any individual attached to the garrison of Jellalabad, it referred always to days gone by, and opportunities neglected; for with reference both to the present and the future, the least reflecting of that gallant band saw that all must depend upon his own powers of endurance, and that of the comrades with whom he acted.

In coming to the conclusion that the force from Peshawur would not move at all, the garrison of Jellalabad did their comrades wrong. There was every wish on the part of Brigadier General Wyld to go to the relief of his beleaguered fellow soldiers; and he did march as soon as the political agent would sanction the step, though only to be stopped while a vain endeavour was made to accomplish by negotiation what the sword alone had power to achieve. The consequence was, that baffled, deceived, and overreached, two regiments of Native Infantry lingered at the foot of the pass, till such a crowd of warriors gathered for its defence, that when the attempt was made to cut a way through it failed. So did the intermixture of civil with military authority work at every stage in the Afghan war. So unhappy was the influence which presided over every plan for the maintenance of a commanding position in a country whereinto a British army ought never, perhaps, to have entered.

Meanwhile information in regard to the fate of the few survivors from General Elphinstone's corps began to come in. A letter was received, on the 18th, from Captain Souter, of the 44th, which, bearing date "Tootoo, near Gundamuck," gave an ac-

count of the last struggle made by a handful of the men of his regiment, in which they were all destroyed. Only he and Major Griffiths, of the 37th Native infantry, survived; and they were both prisoners in the hands of a chief, who undertook to convey them uninjured to Jellalabad, provided he were made sure of receiving a ransom at the rate of a thousand rupees for each. In a moment a subscription was set on foot, and the privates of the 13th collecting among them upwards of one thousand rupees, the remainder were with great difficulty mustered by the officers. A report to this effect was sent without delay to Tootoo, whereupon the Serjeant Major of the 37th, who was likewise a prisoner there, came over; and a second offer was made to ransom the whole, including thirteen men of the 13th, and fifteen, or thereabouts, of the 44th, for a lakh of rupees. With extreme difficulty, and only by encroaching on the public funds, the desired amount was made up. But the parties sent with it were set upon and plundered before they reached the place of their destination; and the next thing heard of the unhappy captives was that Akbar Khan had claimed them, and removed them to a place of security in the Lughman valley. There were not two opinions in the garrison respecting the robbery of the treasure, or the cause of it. The whole was understood to be the result of a preconcerted scheme, and the poor fellows who had given all that they possessed to redeem their countrymen from bondage were forced to find what consolation they might in the consciousness of having acted for the best.

Among the chiefs whose clans dwelt in the vicinity of Jellalabad, there was one Abdool Guffoor Khan, whose aim seemed to be to keep as far as possible on good terms with both parties. He it was who, on receiving an exorbitant price, used to supply the garrison with provisions; and he now so far enlarged the circle of his friendly offices, as to become the medium of communication between General Sale's brigade and the British prisoners in the Lughman valley. These, as is well known, included the wives of all the officers who had been so imprudent as to carry their families to Cabul; among whom were Lady Sale and her daughter, Mrs. Sturt, now unfortunately a widow; and to them, as well as to the officers and men, such supplies of little luxuries were sent as their own poverty, in regard to these

matters, enabled the garrison of Jellalabad to muster. Clothing, books, and a small supply of money reached the prisoners safely, and were by them highly esteemed. But of tea there was not a grain in Jellalabad, and coffee was in like manner wanting.

Such were the principal events which left their impress as it passed on to the month of January, 1842. Stirring and important, though the reverse of exhilarating, all who survived to speak of them felt them to be; yet were they but the forerunners of others still more momentous to the handful of resolute men by whom Jellalabad was occupied. For the very first day of February gave promise, or seemed to do so, of sharper work than had yet been encountered. Numerous bodies of the enemy were observed marching from various quarters, and pushing off all in the same direction, namely, towards Lughman. The natural inference was, that there the grand muster would take place, and that when they had assembled in sufficient force to bear down, as they imagined, all resistance, Akbar Khan and his people would attack. Now though to this consummation all men looked, as to a thing sooner or later inevitable, its near approach put them a good deal upon their mettle. An order came out the same day, that all such of the camp-followers as were able to carry arms should be enrolled; and these, knowing that they would surely share the fate of their masters, cheerfully obeyed it. As many muskets and rifles as chanced to be in store (they were not very numerous, for they had accumulated chiefly out of deaths in the field) were delivered to the most enterprising, while the remainder were supplied with pikes, the heads of which were fabricated out of old hoops, or any other bits of iron which it was found practicable to gather in from a thousand different sources. This done, the recruits were trained to wield their weapons in a rude but not inefficient way; and having places assigned to them along the ramparts, presented when arranged there a very formidable appearance. They declared themselves willing to die at their posts, whenever the necessity might arise.

Meanwhile, that as far as was possible the hazard of famine might be provided against, foraging parties went forth on two successive days, and brought back with them one hundred and seventy head of cattle, with between six and seven hundred sheep.

The cattle were slaughtered at once, and salted down, for there was no fodder on which to support them; and the sheep were sent out every morning to graze upon the marshes that intervened between the river and the town wall, shepherds and an armed covering party attending them. And finally, every tree and bush within sight of the place was cut down, and all the doors and timber-work from the houses near were carried off and laid up as winter fuel. This done, men drew their breath with increased facility, and received with indifference the contradictory rumours, now of coming assaults, now of relief at hand, which from day to day, and well nigh from hour to hour, poured in upon them.

I have had occasion to speak of the mechanical genius of Lieut. Sinclair of the 13th Light Infantry, and of the manner in which he exercised his talent to promote the hilarity of his comrades during the peaceful occupation of Cabul. In Jellalabad a more important field of usefulness was afforded to him. There was not a mill in the place, and hence the corn which the foragers brought in, however acceptable it might be to the horses, could not by the men of the garrison be converted into bread. Mr. Sinclair took the matter up, and in due time produced as many hand-mills as sufficed to grind from day to day the quantity of flour that was required. It is unnecessary to add that if, while prosecuting his work, the gallant mechanic found both amusement and occupation, its completion was hailed with extreme delight by his brother soldiers. Cakes baked upon the coals, or cooked over heated stones, now took the place of parched corn, and the change was felt by all to whom it applied as a serious improvement in their physical condition.

Dr. Brydon recovered; so did the sergeant-major of the 37th Native Infantry, who had declined returning with the money bearers to Lughman; but an unfortunate Greek merchant, who had escaped the slaughter of Koord Cabul and Gundamuck, died of lock-jaw brought on by excessive suffering: he was buried in one of the ditches. Neither did the gallant garrison forget, amid the difficulties of its situation, to pay the customary honours to such days of fête as occurred. On the 12th of February a royal salute was fired in honour of the Prince of Wales's birthday, which caused no slight sensation

when first the roar of the artillery was heard,—they who were not in the secret coming hastily to the conclusion that General Pollock with his army was in sight: for it is due to Lord Auckland's administration to record, that no sooner did intelligence of the state of things in Afghanistan reach them, than they despatched Pollock to take the command of the corps which was to carry relief to the forces in Cabul. And Pollock's arrival in Peshawur having already been ascertained, people naturally looked for his appearance in the valley of Jellalabad from one day to another. Pollock, however, did not come, but instead of him, the white tents of Akbar Khan were seen on the morning of the 15th on the farther side of the river, and about six miles distant from the walls; and, as rumour had been very busy for some days previously, describing both the force which he commanded and the desperate intentions by which he was actuated, the near prospect of a struggle, on the issue of which their lives must depend, became manifest to the garrison, and was greeted cheerfully.

Hard and steadily the men laboured in the ditches and on the ramparts round about. They were merry, too, at their tasks, for the officers shared them; and, all faring alike, there sprang up between these classes that sort of companionship which in well-regulated corps always exists near an enemy, and which, so far from relaxing, tightens, while it renders easy to be borne, the bonds of discipline. They had worked, moreover, to such an excellent purpose, especially during the 16th, 17th, and 18th, that the acting engineer began to consider how far it might be necessary to keep them so many hours in each day to their tasks. But while on the 19th he was pondering this matter, and giving directions that the scarp of the ditch should be polished off, an event befel, so sudden and so awful, that to his dying day none who witnessed will ever be able to forget it.

The morning of the 19th set in cold and windy. It was perhaps as comfortless an opening to the day as had been experienced since the occupation of the town; yet there were no manifestations in the sky or in the state of the atmosphere of any storm brewing. Accordingly the men marched out as usual, carrying their arms with them; and having piled the latter, took spade and pickaxe in hand, and plied them cheer-

fully. The guards were, as usual, at the gates; the sentries occupied their accustomed posts along the ramparts; and the officers not on duty sought amusement in walking or riding, some outside the walls, others within the circle of the lines. Col. Monteith, who happened to be field-officer for the day, had ascended one of the bastions, and was sweeping the horizon with his telescope, when all at once the earth began to tremble, and there was a noise, not so much like thunder as of a thousand heavily-laden waggons rolling and jolting over an ill-paved street. The effect upon all over whom the spell of the phenomenon was cast is not to be described. They looked up and around them with a stare of consternation; and then, as if actuated by one common influence, the parties in the trenches, seizing their arms, rushed out. It was well for them that they did so; for scarcely had they reached the glacis ere the whole of the plain began to heave like billows on the surface of the ocean, and walls and houses, splitting asunder, came tumbling down upon the space which but an instant before had been crowded with workmen. No man who saw that sight could any longer be at a loss to realise the "opening by the earth of its mouth, and the swallowing of Dathan and Abiram and their household;" for the earth did open her mouth and close it repeatedly, receiving on one occasion into the horrid gulf an officer high in rank and throwing him forth again, happily without the infliction on his person of any serious damage.

The earthquake of the 19th of February undid in an hour all that it had taken the garrison of Jellalabad three months to accomplish. The whole of the parapets which had been with so much skill and diligence constructed were thrown down with a fearful crash into heaps of ruins. In the walls, breaches were made, more accessible than any which the troops found when they first entered the place; and the entire circuit was more or less shaken. As to the houses in the town, there was scarcely one of them which escaped more or less of damage. Some fell in altogether; others had their fronts or flanks destroyed and the roofs shaken down; and the cloud of dust which rose immediately on the occurrence of the catastrophe is described as having been portentous. Happily, very few lives were lost. By far the greater number of the troops, being without the

walls when the shock came, stood upon the glacis, or lay flat, while it heaved beneath them, to witness the overthrow; and the guards, making for open spaces, escaped. Some natives were overwhelmed in the ruins of the houses where they sojourned; and Colonel Monteith, before he could escape from the rampart, sustained some bruises. But, on the whole, the casualties were wonderfully rare; and the stores, both of ammunition and salted provisions, sustained no damage.

It is at moments like these, and amid such a convulsion of nature, that the sense of his own nothingness is forced upon the least considerate of men. Battle and the tempest at sea are in some sort familiar both to soldiers and sailors; and if the occurrence of either sober them for the momemt, the impression soon wears off when the cause which immediately produced it has ceased to operate. But the earthquake, and especially such an earthquake as this, speaks to their moral nature in a sterner tone, and awakens in them emotions which do not pass away in an hour. I could, if delicacy did not forbid the proceeding, specify more than one instance wherein the effect of the convulsion of that day was to stir for the first time the religious principle in bosoms which had never before acknowledged it. At the same time none could look round upon the havoc that had occurred without feeling that the place, with all its inmates, was as open to the assault of the enemy as it had ever been since the brigade took possession of it. Indeed, circumstances were so much less favourable now than formerly, that the armed strength of Afghanistan was free to be carried whithersoever Akbar Khan might direct; and his desire to make himself master of the town was too openly expressed to admit of a doubt regarding his application of it to that purpose. Now, as his army stood scarce six miles from the glacis, it was impossible to imagine that he would long remain in ignorance of the havoc which had been wrought in the defences. What was to be done? That point the decision of the commander, and the excellent spirit that pervaded the troops, decided at once. Throughout the 19th, whenever from time to time shocks, though less violent than the first, occurred, the garrison was satisfied to maintain an attitude of watchfulness; and at night all lay upon their arms, sleeping at their alarm-posts. But the dawn of the 20th found them once

more with spade and pickaxe in hand, clearing away the rubbish and filling up the breaches as well as they could. At the same time Sir Robert Sale considered it expedient to despatch a hasty messenger to Peshawur with a letter which contained a full account of the catastrophe, and urged General Pollock to march to their relief. But General Pollock either did not receive the despatch, or he found himself unable to comply with the requisition which it contained; and the garrison was in consequence left, as it had been before, to depend upon the care of Providence and its own vigilance and exceeding gallantry.

CHAPTER XIX.

Siege continued—Sortie.

THERE was no falling away in the confidence of these brave men, nor any change in their manner of life, either with or without the lines. Anticipating a stricter investment, they made good use of the opportunities that were present with them; and sending out daily grass-cutting and foraging parties, they did their best to provide a little stock of necessaries against the season of increased difficulty. As was to be expected, these forays were not invariably executed without loss. The enemy's cavalry, of which about two thousand were understood to be in camp, made occasional dashes where they imagined that the foragers were without support; and though always checked, and sometimes severely punished by the troopers of the 5th, they here and there inflicted a blow that was felt. On such occasions the guns on the bastions did excellent service. The whole country within long range of the walls had been carefully measured by the artillery officers, and certain marks set up by which the distance could be accurately calculated; and the consequence was, that every shot thrown where a group of Afghans presented themselves, told. Indeed, to such perfection was the gunnery of the place carried, that a man and horse at eight hundred or a thousand yards' distance ran extreme risk of being cut down by a round shot; and on one occasion, at least, Captain Backhouse struck down a cavalier who could not have approached within a mile of the fort.

No satisfactory reason has ever been assigned for the reluctance which Akbar Khan manifested to bring his dispute with the garrison of Jellalabad to the arbitrament of a hand-to-hand fight. Though the earthquake occurred on the 19th, and he could not but be aware of its effects upon the English works, Akbar kept up to the 26th his encamping ground on the Cabul side of the river. Then, however, he put his people in motion,

and about an hour before noon large masses of men were seen approaching, who, throwing themselves round the place, took possession of the whole circle of remote forts and heights, and rendered the blockade, to all outward appearance, complete. Parties were then pushed forward, which, getting under cover of some broken walls about five hundred yards from the southern part of the town, opened a fire upon every thing which showed itself above the parapet. This continued throughout the whole day, the people on Piper's Hill fusillading in like manner; yet not a man nor animal of any kind sustained hurt. Meanwhile the British artillery made occasional answers to the best purpose. It was curious to see the round shot strike the loose stones, causing the men who had sought shelter behind them to flee in all directions; while the shell practice towards the Piper's Hill, judging from the commotion which it produced, must have been excellent. But not a musket was discharged; for in the scarcity of musket ammunition lay the main source of weakness in Jellalabad; and because it was considered unwise to expose them to insult which they could not repel, the infantry, much to their own regret, were kept on the alert under arms, indeed, but within the city walls.

In this manner February wore away. Repeated shocks of earthquake, though in a milder form than those of the 19th, marked its progress, and it was as prolific as its predecessors had been in rumours of all kinds. But it produced no event of which, because of its influence on the fate of the campaign, it is worth while to make mention. The same sort of annoyance which he had given to the garrison on the 28th, Akbar renewed to as little purpose on the 2nd of March, till towards the evening, when a party of sappers sallied forth, and drove the Afghan skirmishers away.

The 3rd of March was a season of comparative repose. The enemy did not approach the walls, having suffered for their temerity, in this respect, the previous day; but on the 4th a great movement was seen in their camp, and the garrison stood at once to its arms. Large bodies of men moved round the northern face of the town, and took up a position in a grove, about a mile and a half in the direction of Peshawur. It was calculated by those who watched the proceeding through their

telescopes, that the force collected there could not fall short of a thousand infantry and five hundred horse. Neither was there any mistake as to the design of the manœuvre. Akbar, distrusting his power of carrying the place by assault, was resolved to reduce it by famine, and the grove was occupied as affording a convenient point whence attacks might be made on the foraging parties when they went out; while all communication with the district which had heretofore sent in the chief portion of the supplies was cut off. Akbar had not reckoned, however, on the skill of the artillerists that lay behind the walls; neither, in all probability, was he aware that to a more remote circumference the radii of the circle, of which Jellalabad was the centre, had all been accurately measured. Wherefore, the whole of his plan suffered interruption the moment the battery on the south-east bastion opened, for every shot struck into the midst of his people; and after the fourth had told, the division retired in confusion to a more remote camping ground.

Meanwhile, from morning till night, strong working-parties plied their intrenching tools. They were not permitted to do so unmolested, for clouds of Afghans crept up under cover wherever they could find it, and fired long shots incessantly, though not to much purpose. At length the officers devised a scheme for drawing off this fire from the men, which proved for a time eminently successful, and occasioned great mirth in the garrison. They dressed up a wooden image, and put a cocked hat on its head, painting the face so as to make it resemble, when seen from a distance, an officer of rank, and raising it from time to time above the parapet, drew such a storm of fire towards it, as left the working-party free. They would cause it to move backwards and forwards, likewise, as if the General had been reconnoitring, and occasionally let it fall, whereupon a loud shout from the Afghan skirmishers gave indication that they were amazingly pleased with themselves. It is scarcely necessary to add, that the enemy's shout was responded to by peals of laughter from the garrison; but the trick seemed to be discovered at last, and then the effigy was removed.

In this manner things went on from one day to another. The enemy received continual reinforcements, while the garrison was thrown more and more upon its own resources; and to add to

the boldness of the one, and the difficulties in the position of the other, every hour brought tidings of defeat and disaster to the English arms elsewhere. At Cabul matters were almost as desperate as they could be. The Shah, shut up in the Balla Hissar, could scarcely hold his ground; while Colonel Palmer, who, with a regiment of Native Infantry had kept Ghuznee till famine stared him in the face, was reported to have capitulated. No man's heart, however, failed him, of all Sale's gallant band, because of these things; on the contrary, they felt that there was the greater need for them to retain their hold upon the country: and, perceiving that the assailants were becoming more daring than heretofore, Sale determined to read them a lesson, as he had formerly done. It was observed on the morning of the 10th, that the enemy had been busy over-night, for the dawn of day showed a number of songas, or stout breast-works, thrown up within two hundred yards of the ditch, and that each was lined with its armed party became manifest from the heavy musketry fire that was poured from them all. Moreover, some spies reported that Akbar had begun to mine, and that he was running his chamber under a part of the wall, which having been blown up during a former siege, had led to the capture of the place. A rumour of this sort was too serious to be treated with neglect; wherefore, orders were issued for a portion of the brigade to make ready for a sortie on the morrow, and Colonel Dennie was warned to take the command, and to direct the movement.

At dawn of day on the 11th of March, three hundred men of the 13th, as many of the 35th Native Infantry, with two hundred sappers and miners, having Captain Broadfoot at their head, marched out of the Peshawur gate. At the same time the whole of the cavalry passed through the south gate, and formed in the plain; while the artillery, manning their guns on the ramparts, opened such a fire upon the songas as rendered it exceedingly inconvenient for anybody to show his head above them. There was a great stir in Akbar's camp. His whole army, horse and foot, turned out with much alacrity; and the former made more than one attempt to march forward—but so destructive was the cannonade from the walls, that they never got beyond a certain line, ere they broke and fled. Meanwhile the British infantry, throwing out skirmishers, pressed on; and driving the enemy's

advanced posts before them, soon forced their way to the breast-works, and knocked them to pieces. It was ascertained at the same time, beyond the possibility of doubt, that no attempt at mining had been made: and the purpose of the sally having thus been effected, Colonel Dennie caused the bugles to sound the recall. According to custom in such cases, the British troops no sooner began to fall back, than the enemy trod boldly upon their footsteps. The skirmish became, therefore, more warm than ever, and Captain Broadfoot, who with his sappers bore the brunt of it, received a musket-ball through the thigh. But the moment our people halted, and formed as if to charge, the Afghans fled in confusion! The result of the operation was a few casualties on the side of the garrison, without the loss of a single life: while of the enemy about a hundred were supposed to have fallen; and the sprinkling of dead bodies over the field of battle was considerable.

It were tedious to tell how, day by day, events similar to those which have already been described came to pass. The enemy, though worsted in every skirmish, relaxed nothing in their boldness; but took up again the ground which they had lost, as soon as our people withdrew from it. Their breast-works, in like manner, sprang up after they had been thrown down, with marvellous celerity; while their fire was as constant, as teasing, and in the main as harmless, as it had been from the beginning. Occasionally a ball would take effect; and once a sentinel was killed, being shot through the loop-hole which enabled him to look abroad in comparative security. Moreover, the musket ammunition within the walls became so scarce, that instructions were given to collect the bullets which the enemy threw, and to run them into moulds for the use of the garrison. Some idea, likewise, may be formed of the nature of the leaden hail under which the garrison lived, when it is stated that one officer collected in a day for his own use not fewer than one hundred and thirty bullets; and as powder was happily abundant, a supply of cartridges came into store—not before it was needed. And here it may be well to observe, that among the officers in garrison there were many who had brought rifles and fowling-pieces to the seat of war. These, for the lack of other game, took to practising against the Afghans; and many a capital shot was made,

not in wantonness, but always when the necessity for it arose. For example, the grass-cutters went forth every morning to collect fodder for the animals. If it was meant that they should penetrate to a spot far removed from the walls, an armed party escorted them; if there seemed to be forage enough near at hand, they were permitted to go unguarded, the sentinels on the ramparts looking out for them. On these occasions it was that the good aim of one or more amateur riflemen saved many a valuable life, and secured food for the cavalry horses; for it was considered a mere amusement to keep an eye upon the enemy's parties, and to knock down the boldest, as often as, in the attempt to cut off the foragers, they ventured within range.

Meanwhile there was no end to the rumours which, partly by means of spies, and partly through the exertions of messengers—who, in consideration of large bribes, made their way beyond the enemy's lines—reached the garrison. It was communicated to Sir Robert Sale to-day, that General Pollock had begun his march; and two days afterwards the statement was contradicted upon the very best authority. By and by, tidings of an attempt having been made on Akbar Khan's life came in, which proved to be substantially correct—for one of his people wounded him, though, as further inquiry showed, the affair was the result of accident. Letters, also, were received, at remote intervals, from the prisoners at Lughman, which gave but an indifferent account of their condition and prospects, and occasioned much sorrow to their friends. Moreover, warnings of an assault arranged and about to be carried into effect were rife; and these met with the more ready credence, that in spite of the defeats which they sustained in every skirmish, the enemy seemed to grow continually bolder. Now they would show themselves in force, manœuvre in their own way, and then disappear; now clouds of skirmishers would threaten the working-parties, and force them to retire from the ditches within the walls. But a worse evil than any of these threatened. Provisions began to fail. Of grain, no further supplies had been received for weeks; and the amount in store had become so scanty, that the fighting men were put upon quarter allowance—the camp-followers denied altogether. Meat, also, was grown very scarce. The salted beef, which had been very carefully issued, was fast melting

away; and not a hoof remained, either of cattle or of sheep. Now it is comparatively a light thing to face armed men, provided you can rely upon the troops that serve under you; but when the means of feeding your own people begin to fail, your situation, if you be in command of an army or a fortress, becomes extremely distressing. Sir Robert Sale, firm and gallant as he was, felt this. He therefore continued to bribe messenger after messenger, whom he sent with instances more and more pressing, to General Pollock at Peshawur. But, though promises of speedy relief were brought back in abundance, no prospect of their fulfilment opened upon him; and both he, and the noble fellows who met him daily in his audience chamber, began, in spite of themselves, to become both anxious and impatient.

CHAPTER XX.

Battle of the 7th of April—Fall of Colonel Dennie.

It was now the 1st of April; and during a space of four months and a half this handful of British troops had maintained itself against disaster, against frequent attacks, against rumours of evil on every side—in the heart of an enemy's country. Another and still more terrible danger was beginning to threaten; and sickness, which is ever the forerunner of absolute famine, showed itself among the camp-followers. The soldiers, to be sure, were healthy to a degree that has no parallel in the history of warfare. Not one suffered, except from wounds, and all were become as hard as iron; for neither heat, nor cold, nor moisture, seemed to produce the smallest effect upon them. Even the earthquake had in some sort lost its terrors. It returned continually; and once, at least, with such violence as to crack the walls which, with so much labour, they had for the second time placed in a defensible condition. Yet no man's heart failed him; and as for service in sortie or foraging, all were ready for it at a moment's notice. The practice in Jellalabad was this. Nobody wore his uniform. Red coats closely buttoned up were found to be very inconvenient garments for men who had to handle the spade and the axe more frequently than the musket; so the regimental clothing was all put in store, and fatigue jackets, or perhaps no jackets at all, became the order of the day. Over these, or else over their shirts, the men slung their accoutrements, and, with sleeves tucked up, laboured, in good spirits and with exceeding industry, the officers digging beside them. Suddenly there would arise a cry that the enemy were approaching. Down went spade and pickaxe, and forth from their places in the pile the loaded muskets were plucked; and then up upon the glacis, and away across the gardens and enclosures near it, these gallant fellows ran, in the best of all skirmishing order. They did not know what it was to sustain a repulse; and hence they

faced fearlessly, and bore down on all occasions any excess of numbers. If ever men had learned to consider themselves invincible, the garrison of Jellalabad, under their veteran leader, had achieved that end. And when troops become fairly convinced that it is impossible to beat them, the assailants who make the attempt, be they whom they may, will find that they have set themselves to a job of no ordinary toughness.

It was the 1st of April, and the grass-cutters having been out, as usual, early in the morning, were returned with a small supply of forage for the horses and beasts of burthen. The supply, however, was more scanty than heretofore. Indeed, for some time back the enemy had striven to cut off the garrison from this resource, by driving flocks of sheep upon the meadow-lands, and sending them, under an escort, as near as from four to six hundred yards from the crest of the glacis. To-day they repeated the manœuvre; and Sir Robert Sale determined to try whether it might not be possible to make them smart for it. With this view the cavalry were ordered to mount, without sound of trumpet; while six hundred and fifty infantry, namely, one hundred and fifty sappers, with two hundred from each of the regular regiments, got under arms, and made ready to support them. Suddenly the south gate was thrown open; and a part of the horse, crossing the drawbridge at speed, made for the sheep. No sooner were they seen than the shepherds ran to drive their flocks away; but the troopers were too quick for them. Having headed the nearest flock and secured it, they rode at another, and, heading them in like manner, cut down the shepherds ere they could escape. Meanwhile the rest of the cavalry, with the infantry supports, hurried on; and a body of grass-cutters, armed with poles, being thrown in rear of each flock, not fewer than three were driven towards the town.

There was great consternation, as may be imagined, in Akbar's camp, and an earnest desire to prevent, if possible, the besieged escaping with the prey. Multitudes of men, some on foot, others on horseback, turned out, and advanced at a rapid pace against the escort. But they soon found that the gunners on the ramparts had not forgotten their cunning. Shot after shot rushed through their masses, sweeping down whole sections; while the gallant 5th faced their horses round, and stood ready

to meet, in mid-career, any force which might be induced to charge them. None, however, were bold enough to do so. And the consequence was that the sallying party returned into the town with the loss of one man killed, and a few wounded, driving not fewer than five hundred head of sheep before them.

Great was the joy of all concerned in this brilliant affair, and very hearty the congratulations that met them on their arrival; but of a still nobler trait in the character of the 35th Native Infantry I am bound to take notice, because it reminds me of the behaviour of Clive's sepoys at the celebrated defence of Arcot. On the 2nd Sir Robert Sale proceeded to distribute the captured sheep among the corps and departments composing his garrison. The 35th declined to accept the boon. They sent a deputation to the general, which respectfully acquainted him that animal food was less necessary for them than for Europeans, and besought him to give their portion of the booty to their gallant comrades of the 13th. No wonder that between these two corps there should have sprung up a romantic friendship, which, though the accidents of service have parted them, probably for ever, neither is likely to forget, at all events as a tradition, while they keep their places respectively in the armies of the Queen and of the East India Company.

From this date up to the 6th all remained comparatively quiet in and around Cabul. The enemy, who for some time back had begun to entrench themselves, continued their labours as briskly as ever; and connected their fortified camp, which was interposed between the besieged and Peshawur, with a line of castles on either flank. The garrison, in like manner, added daily to the strength of their defences; and sent out foraging parties, which sometimes succeeded, sometimes failed, in collecting supplies, and more than once sustained a sharp encounter while so employed. Meanwhile reports of General Pollock's proceedings, each contradictory of the other, continued to be brought in; till there arose a feeling within the lines that he must have attempted the Khyber and failed. Indeed, a rumour to this effect became rife on the evening of the 5th; and when, on the following day, the thunder of Akbar's guns was heard firing a salute, that which had previously amounted only to suspicion grew into something like conviction. And now came the question, What was to be

done? Five hundred mountain sheep soon pass away, where there are two thousand mouths to be fed with them; and mutton alone, if bread or rice be wanting, ceases by degrees to be palatable. A council of war was accordingly summoned, to which the plan of a general attack on the enemy's position was proposed. It was shown that ammunition, not less than food, would soon become scarce; and the point was started whether, assuming that Pollock had sustained a repulse, it would not be better to cut a way through the enemy's lines than to abide where they were, till either famine or the want of means wherewith to defend themselves should compel a surrender. There were not two opinions in that council. All voted for the nobler proceeding; and each, as he gave his opinion, fortified it by reminding his friends, that if they must perish, it would be better to die like men, with arms in their hands. For the memory of the slaughter in Koord Cabul was yet fresh with them; and they were not so simple as to believe that, in the event of an entrance within their works being effected, they would fare better at the hands of an exasperated foe than their comrades had done. Wherefore orders were given to pack up everything; baggage, stores, ammunition, all that they had; and to keep it in readiness to move, under a proper guard, as soon as the way should have been cleared for such a convoy by success in a great battle.

Men lay down that night in a graver frame of mind than usual. There was no distrust about them, none whatever. They had the same confidence in their leader and in themselves that they ever had, and hoped, as heretofore, for victory. But if the terms in which they committed themselves to the protection of a higher power were more solemn, perhaps deeper, than any which on former occasions had been used, the reader who thinks at all will be little surprised at the circumstance. They were about to throw their last die. They were going to engage in their final battle; for, let it terminate how it might, there would not remain for them musket ammunition enough to try the fortune of another. It was necessary, therefore, that their victory should be, not only sure, but complete; so complete as to open for them a free passage to the head of the Khyber—perhaps beyond it. And as they knew that the force opposed to them, besides being well supplied with guns from Cabul, could not number less than

nine thousand fighting men, it is not to be wondered at if they looked forward to the business of the morrow with solemnity. But when the stir began, when, rising without sound of bugle or beat of drum, they took their places in the ranks—three columns, parallel, and each facing the gate through which it was to pass—they all felt that their nerves were strung magnificently, and that each would do his duty. And, one and all, they did it.

The order of battle on the memorable 7th of April was this:—The whole of the infantry, consisting of the 13th and 35th, with 350 sappers, formed into three columns of attack. They severally consisted of pretty nearly the same numerical strength; for to the sappers one company from the 13th, and another from the 35th, were added: and they mustered each about five hundred bayonets. Twelve men alone were left as a guard at each of the city gates; and the walls were manned by the camp followers. Moreover, there had been lowered from the ramparts, in the course of the previous afternoon, six nine-pounders, of which Captain Abbott now took the command; and these being well horsed, prepared to push forward in the interval between the left and the centre columns. Finally, the cavalry, as usual, were ready for their work; and the different commands having been settled—Monteith with his own regiment, Dennie with his, and Captain Havelock of the 13th being put in charge of the third—the whole set forward with a firm pace, a due proportion of skirmishers covering them.

Between the Afghan entrenched camp and Jellalabad there were two or three forts, which the enemy occupied in strength, and which constituted their advanced posts. It had been agreed that the columns should pass them by; and making straight for the lines, accomplish the overthrow of the main body in the first instance, and then return to the attack, should the garrisons continue to hold them. But a flanking fire from one of these told so severely upon the 13th Light Infantry, that Sir Robert Sale suddenly commanded it to bring forward the left shoulder, and fall upon the place by a breach which seemed to be practicable. With undaunted resolution the 13th rushed at the fort, Colonel Dennie nobly leading; and finding the aperture sufficiently large to admit of it, they rushed through the outer wall—only to find themselves exposed to a murderous fire from the untouched de-

fences of the inner keep. Here Dennie received, just as he approached the breach, his mortal wound." A ball entered the side, passing through the sword-belt; and he bent forward upon his horse. Lieut. and Adjutant (now Captain) Wood instantly rode up to him, and expressed a hope that the hurt was not serious. But it was more than serious; it was fatal. A couple of orderlies, by Captain Wood's direction, turned his horse's head homewards, and leading it by the bridle, endeavoured to guide him to the town. But he never reached it alive. He died with the sound of battle in his ears, hoping, but not living to be assured, that it would end triumphantly.

So fell as brave a soldier as the British army ever produced, and as good an officer as served throughout the war in Afghanistan. There would have been great lamentation over him had the hurry and excitement of the fight permitted those who took part in it to divert their thoughts from the business that was immediately before them. But soldiers when engaged with the enemy have no time to indulge the finer feelings; and the gallant 13th found themselves already in such a position as bent all their care, and that of their leaders, towards finding the best and readiest method of extrication from it. The inner tower or keep, it was manifest could not be carried. There was no breach, nor any means of ingress, except through a doorway elevated to half the height of the tower; and as the ladder by which alone it could be approached was removed, the men, however willing to force an entrance one by one, could not reach the threshold. After a brief pause, therefore, the word was given to pass on, and emerge into the open plain through an aperture on the further side; and then the original plan, the deviation from which had effected no good, was resumed. On they went, at the double—driving before them the skirmishers which made a show of resistance, till they gained the entrenchments, and broke through with a loud shout. Meanwhile both Colonel Monteith's and Captain Havelock's columns had trodden down all opposition. The former maintained, without a check, the pace at which their advance began. The latter, sweeping round by the river in order to turn the flank of the position, became exposed to the attack of the enemy's cavalry; and were more than once obliged to form square, which they did with the precision of an ordinary

field-day. But they too gained their point: and now the three divisions uniting, poured such a fire upon the enemy's masses, as dissolved them quite. Their guns, which had been served with much boldness, were in consequence deserted. One they endeavoured to carry away with them, but a well directed round shot from Abbott's battery killed both of the horses which had just been harnessed to the limber; after which the rout became universal. Had the force of British cavalry been such as could have been launched, without support, in pursuit, few would have escaped to tell the tale of that day's overthrow. As it was, the fugitives being chased towards the river, rushed madly in, and perished, almost as many amid the deep water as by the bayonets and shot of the pursuers.

Never was victory more complete. Camp, baggage, artillery, ammunition, standards, horses, arms of every kind, fell into the hands of the conquerors. The camp they committed to the flames; of the baggage, as well as of animals to transport it, they conveyed back to Jellalabad as much as they cared to preserve; and were specially gratified by discovering in one of the forts that flanked the lines, an important magazine of powder, shells, and shot. All these they carried with exceeding joy to the town, where in the course of a very few hours provisions became abundant: for the fame of the battle and of its results soon spread abroad; and as Akbar with the wreck of his army fled towards Cabul, all the chiefs of districts in the other direction hastened to send in their submission.

CHAPTER XXI.

Arrival of Pollock's Army—Great sickness and suffering.

THE action of the 7th of April may be said to have decided the fate of Jellalabad and its "illustrious garrison." Single-handed they broke the power of him under whom the main army of occupation had fallen; and were in a condition either to keep the ground for many months longer, or to force their way back to the provinces at will. For obvious reasons, Sir Robert Sale determined to persevere in the course which he had hitherto followed. Having retained his hold of the country so long and so tenaciously, he would not relinquish it now, especially since he ascertained that General Pollock had suffered no defeat in the Khyber, but was, on the contrary, winning his way through, though not without some loss, and a good deal of difficulty. Accordingly, a market was opened outside one of the gates, to which the country people were encouraged to bring grain, and food of every kind. They were not exorbitant in their charges, for it was their object as well as that of their chiefs to conciliate the Feringhees now they had again won the ascendant; and the barefaced assurance with which many professed friendship, who, only a fortnight previously, had been in arms against the place, amused much more than it provoked the victors. One scoundrel, in particular, the same Guffoor Khan who had first trafficked with Sale, and then sought to betray him, became once more the most forward of his friends; and was treated with a degree of forbearance which, however honourable to the sagacity of the Brigadier, was very little in agreement with either the duplicity or the impudence of the Afghan.

Time passed, and every new day brought some tidings with it more or less to be depended upon. On the 10th the relieving army was heard of as having arrived at the middle of the Khyber. On the 14th letters came in to say that the difficulties of the pass

were all surmounted, and that the loss sustained in various actions did not exceed one officer killed, two or three wounded, and about one hundred and thirty-five men killed and wounded. There was, of course, a feeling of satisfaction in the place, at the near prospect of a junction with their friends. But mixed with it there could not fail to be a proud sense of triumph likewise, for they should meet the comers now, not as men meet those who deliver them from mortal danger, but as conquerors welcoming to the scene of their triumphs comrades who have arrived too late to share either the peril and the glory. And as if to remove all doubts on that head, several officers, having obtained leave, set out by twos and threes, to visit Pollock's camp, being yet a great way off. These confirmed by their appearance the reports of the late victory, which were already in circulation through the lines; and spoke of the facility with which the march on Cabul might be executed, and the tarnished honour of the British name retrieved. But they spoke to men on whose minds the tale of the disasters of the previous year had made an impression more deep, perhaps, than the occasion required. General Pollock had formed his own plans, and was not to be drawn away from them by the enthusiastic conversation of young men flushed with recent successes. And so it came to pass, that he neither quickened his progress to Jellalabad, nor spoke of passing beyond it till means of transport should reach him more abundant than he then possessed, or expected to be able to procure, in a province which for six long months and more had been the theatre of a desperate and unceasing warfare.

The 15th of April brought Pollock's column within seven miles of the lately beleaguered city. There it halted, at a place called Alee Bogham, and encamped for the night. Many visitors from the city flocked to welcome the new comers; and on the following day the band of the 13th went forth to meet them. There was a hearty cheer on both sides; after which the musicians facing about began, according to immemorial usage, to play the strangers in. I do not know whether some touch of waggery might have prompted the choice of the air, yet when the band struck up a Jacobite melody—beautiful in itself, and full of meaning—all who heard acknowledged its fitness to the occasion. The relieving force marched the last two or three

miles towards Jellalabad to the cadence of "Oh, but ye 've been lang o' coming!"

The tale of the siege and defence of Jellalabad is told. Relief came at last, after the garrison, by its own prowess, had dispersed the investing force; and hearty congratulations were exchanged between the brave who came to succour, and the brave who had fought their own battle. It seemed, also, to the wondering marchers that the tales which had been told them of suffering and danger in the place must have been mere inventions. Never had they looked upon troops in higher condition or better order: the very clothing of these men seemed as if it had just come out of store—no soil nor stain being upon its brightness; and their belts and accoutrements were as clean as if for the last half year they had had no more important business to attend to than to keep them so. And as to their countenances, bronzed they unquestionably were through continual exposure to the weather, but not one among them all gave token of other than the rudest health. Moreover, there was food in abundance for their visitors as well as for themselves, and freely they dispensed it. That evening the officers of the garrison entertained at dinner as many of their comrades as were not required for duty; and the latter bringing wine and other luxuries in their train, the entertainment went off with great *éclat*.

From this date the proceedings of Sale's brigade so completely blend and fall in with the operations of General Pollock's army that to continue the narrative of the one, as from day to day events occurred, would involve the necessity of entering into a minute detail of the other. The latter task has, however, been so fully performed by those who have written about operations in which they were personally engaged, that to go beyond a summary on the present occasion would be out of place. I content myself, therefore, with borrowing the substance of a journal which seems to have been kept with diligence and care by an officer of the 13th Light Infantry; and which, therefore, traces accurately the various movements and services of the brigade of which I have in some sort become the historian.

Though the rearmost of Pollock's regiments closed up and gathered about Jellalabad so early as the first week in May,

August had well nigh run itself out ere the campaign can be said to have opened. All this while the troops lay encamped upon a sandy plain, where there was no shelter from the burning rays of the sun; where forage for the cattle was exceedingly scarce; provisions for the men hard to be got; wine, tea, brandy, and other luxuries, all but unattainable, and the water itself neither agreeable nor salubrious. Sickness, as might have been anticipated, soon began to show itself; and day by day people died of dysentery and fever. Horses and camels perished in like manner; and as the latter were not very carefully put under ground, the stench from their putrifying carcases soon became intolerable. The odours which in a tropical climate float upon the atmosphere of a camp are anything but agreeable at the best; and if to these be added the effluvium that arises from decaying animal matter, pestilence is sure to follow. Moreover, the flies come in myriads, and there, in Jellalabad, and over the face of the country round it, they absolutely swarmed. The very air became black with them; and they entered into men's food, and crawled over their persons, polluting whatever they touched. It was a season of intense suffering to the troops, that during which they seemed to rest upon their oars. For the town became a perfect Lazar-house. The camp was little better; and the sufferers from a burning heat sought shelter against it by digging holes in the ground and sleeping in them at the hazard of being buried alive, as in one instance, at least, actually befel.

For this inaction, and the consequences arising out of it, General Pollock was not to blame. He acted under orders that were distinct and peremptory; and found himself besides so deficient in baggage animals, that to wield the power of which he was possessed became impossible. It seemed, too, as if the remembrance of recent disasters had paralysed the energies of the supreme government at Calcutta. With a change of rulers a change of policy took place. It was natural that it should; neither can it be wondered at if they, on whom the responsibility now rested, shrank from the prospect of risking a second army where the first had perished. But negotiation, which the General had been directed to try, was soon shown to be profitless. Akbar Khan refused to liberate his prisoners; and

having put down the remains of Shah Shujah's party, exercised supreme authority in his father's name.

So passed the months of May and June—amid sickness and much suffering, the necessary results in almost all cases of inactivity when an army is in the field. One event occurred, indeed, to interrupt the monotony of existence, and in its way it was a curious one. There arrived in July at Jellalabad a body of Seikh troops, consisting both of infantry and cavalry, to the amount of perhaps five thousand five hundred men. They were stout fellows, and well armed, marching in good order, and keeping their ranks at a halt; but, except as regarded their drill, they seemed to be under no effective discipline whatever. Two months' pay was issued to them a few days after their arrival, which, so far from mollifying or humanising them, produced an effect diametrically the reverse: they began forthwith to quarrel among themselves, and fighting it out with muskets and ball cartridges mutually gave and received much damage. About a dozen men were killed, and some hundreds wounded ere the fray could be stopped. Nor did the matter end there. A body of about two hundred horse rose upon their commandant, put him to death, burned his tents, and, mounting their bony half-starved looking steeds, rode back to Peshawur. The only cause which they assigned for the mutiny was disgust at being kept idle instead of going where plunder, and the gratification of a bitter hatred of the Afghans—on both of which they had counted—might be obtained.

Meanwhile the "illustrious garrison," which had gone through the perils and restraints of a six months' siege without one hour of sickness, began to droop and languish. The hospitals became crowded; and even they who walked about and did their duty, looked feeble and ghastly. Under these circumstances General Pollock determined to try the effect upon them of a change of air and scene; and as he had at length received instructions to operate, either in advance or retreat, according to his own discretion, he made up his mind to move forward as soon as the means of conveyance would at all permit. Accordingly, on the 6th of August, Sale was directed with the 13th and 35th regiments, a troop of horse artillery, Broadfoot's sappers, and Tait's irregular horse, to march as far as Futtehabad,

on the road to Cabul. Now Futtehabad is distant from Jellalabad not more than seventeen miles; yet such was the enfeebled condition of the troops that three days were required to reach it. The first day the brigade marched only nine miles; yet the gallant 13th left upwards of thirty stragglers behind; of whom four died of apoplexy, two hours after they had been removed to the hospital tent. The next day the column compassed only four miles, and suffered severely even during that short stage; the third carried them to Futtehabad. It was entirely deserted by its inhabitants, for, having made themselves conspicuous by the butchery of some helpless fugitives from General Elphinstone's corps, they not unnaturally expected that a terrible punishment awaited them. Neither did they wholly escape. Every house in the place was rased to the ground; the gardens and orchards were laid waste, and the trees cut down; after which the men pitched their tents, and in a place where forage was abundant, and air and water were alike pure, they picked up from day to day that vigour both of body and mind which a little longer sojourn in Jellalabad would have destroyed beyond the possibility of redemption.

For three weeks Sale and his brigade enjoyed a monopoly of their agreeable encamping ground. They were not altogether weeks of inaction; for Sale was one of those fiery spirits which, if there be anything to be done, cannot rest till it has been accomplished; and being informed of a design on Akbar Khan's part to occupy with a body of riflemen a fort distant from Futtehabad about seven miles, he resolved to anticipate the proceeding. With this view, three hundred men of the 35th Native Infantry, two guns, and two hundred of Tait's horse, were added to Captain Broadfoot's sappers; and the whole were directed to proceed, under Broadfoot's orders, to the fort in question, and to destroy it. There was some little show of resistance at first, which would have been vigorously conducted had Akbar's riflemen been there; but Broadfoot had got the start of the Jezalchies, and no sooner unlimbered his cannon than the people behind the walls hung out a white flag. The place was immediately occupied, and sufficient powder being sent on under an escort, the same evening the gate, with two of the bastions, were mined and blown up. Then followed a course of devastation,

of which, though it may have been necessary for the purpose of striking terror elsewhere, we cannot, now that all angry feeling has subsided, read without regret. The castle was one of Akbar Khan's favourite summer residences. It was surrounded by orchards of fruit-trees, and the village that had sprung up beneath the shelter of its bulwarks lay in the heart of a succession of gardens. Every house was destroyed, every tree barked or cut down; after which, the detachment having collected a considerable spoil of bullocks, sheep, and goats, marched back to camp.

Scarcely was this feat performed ere letters announced to Sir Robert Sale that the whole army was on the eve of breaking up its camp and marching upon Cabul. The news was welcomed both by the Brigadier and his followers with hearty good will; for the number of sick in hospital had diminished one half, and the convalescents were already fit for duty: and when on the 16th the 3rd Light Dragoons, together with a second troop of horse artillery, joined, hope appeared to grow into assurance. Nor did many days elapse ere tokens more explicit of a campaign fairly begun appeared. A proclamation signed by General Pollock was circulated far and wide, and sent in by spies and hired messengers to Cabul. It informed the people of the country that a British army was again about to occupy the capital, and warned those to whom the safe keeping of the British prisoners might have been intrusted, that any act of cruelty or wrong perpetrated upon these unfortunate persons, would draw down a signal revenge. The inhabitants of Cabul in particular were told that General Pollock expected to find his countrymen in that city, and that if any attempt were made to carry them off into the mountain districts, it would be at the peril of those who engaged in it. Nor, in truth, were either of these proclamations uncalled for. To Akbar Khan himself it is due to state that he seems to have acted with great kindness and delicacy towards the British subjects that had fallen into his hands. He refused, indeed, either to ransom or set them free, and carried them about from place to place, sometimes at a rate of travelling more rapid than was altogether compatible either with their habits or their convenience; but as far as his means extended, he supplied their wants with a liberal hand, and was invariably polite, and sometimes considerate, especially to the ladies. It

was not so with such chiefs of villages, especially among the Ghilzies, as managed to keep the prisoners whom they had secured to themselves. They were always harsh, and not unfrequently cruel, especially to the sepoys and Hindostanee followers, whom they seem to have regarded with an absolute hatred. The following may be taken as a specimen of the atrocities of which these savage men were sometimes guilty.

An unfortunate Hindostanee had fallen into the hands of a Ghilzee chief, whose village was not far removed from the British camp at Futtehabad. The poor man, as soon as he learned that his friends were in the neighbourhood, made, naturally enough, an attempt to escape to them; but in this he was not successful, for being overtaken he was brought back and carried before the chief. The latter upbraided him as if he had committed a crime, and, ordering him to be thrown down and held upon the ground, exclaimed, "What! you want to go to the Feringhees, do you?" So saying, the ruffian drew his heavy knife, and with two blows cut off the wretched Hindoo's feet. "Now," he cried, as the poor fellow lay in his blood, "you may go where you will:" and the wounded man took him at his word. He crawled upon his hands and knees, after stanching the hemorrhage in some sort by tying strips of his turban round the wounded limbs, and thus made his way into the British camp. No one who reads this tale can be surprised to learn that a very bitter feeling towards people who could perpetrate so frightful an outrage pervaded the breasts of the soldiers of General Pollock's army, as well European as Native.

At length, on the 21st of August, the tide of war seemed fairly to set in. There arrived that day at Futtehabad Her Majesty's 9th regiment of foot, two squadrons 10th Bengal Cavalry, one squadron 5th cavalry, the 60th and 26th regiments Native Infantry, with Abbott's battery of guns. The commander-in-chief accompanied them in person; and on the following morning, leaving Sale's brigade behind, they pushed forward towards Gundamuck. They marched, likewise, as every other corps in the army was directed to do, in the lightest possible order. For the tents usually carried with an Indian force, Sepoys' pauls, as the marquees of the native soldiers are styled, were substituted. The men's knapsacks, too, were emptied of

everything except a single change of linen, while the baggage of the officers was cut down to the lowest, and they were required to sleep three or four in the same marquee. Yet with all these precautions, the means of transport proved in the hour of difficulty so inadequate that a much stronger garrison was left to protect the rear than had been either contemplated or desired. Moreover, not a man was permitted to go in advance of whom it was even doubtful whether his physical powers would sustain him. All the sick, with most of the convalescents, were sent back to Jellalabad. In a word, the army was trimmed, weeded, and fined down, till it consisted of not more than nine or ten thousand troops, but they were excellent troops in regard both to discipline and the strength and bravery of individuals; and they were attended by five or six thousand Seikh soldiers, besides about forty thousand followers. As to the line of camels, horses, ponies, bullocks, it seemed, when fairly set in motion, to be interminable;—so unwieldy is an Asiatic host even in the hands of Englishmen, so inveterate is the force of custom in a land where the climate both enervates the frame, and induces tastes that agree but little with our European notions of the proper bearing of a soldier.

CHAPTER XXII.

Advance of Pollock's Army to Cabul.

WHILE the British army thus prepared itself for a renewal of active operations, the voice of rumour described Akbar Khan as filled with alarm, and continually wavering in his counsels. To-day it was stated that, having put to death the last representative of the house of Shah Shujah, he had ascended the throne, and was resolved to maintain himself there to the last. To-morrow brought tidings of revolts and civil wars, of which the Prince Futteh Jung, after effecting his escape from Cabul, was the originator. A third report represented the son of Dost Mohammed as in full march towards Bameean, whence, carrying his prisoners along with him, he was prepared, on the first appearance of danger, to escape into Balkh. But that the nation was as little disposed as ever to bow the neck to a foreign yoke, all who spoke upon the subject seemed to be agreed. Hence, when towards the end of August the echoes of firing began to be heard in the passes, and the sky became illumined at night with the blaze of burning villages, none who listened to the sound, and gazed upon the spectacle, expressed the slightest surprise. For all men felt that they had the same game to play over again, which the more sanguine had regarded as brought to a close three years previously; and a determination to play it better was universal in the ranks.

Wave after wave of the force which was to avenge the massacre of Elphinstone's corps moved on. The 21st brought Pollock with one division into Futtehabad; the 22nd saw him push beyond it. On the 25th Brigadier Monteith came up, bringing with him Her Majesty's 31st regiment, the 33rd Native Infantry, the mountain-train, the 1st Light cavalry, and Ferreys's Jezalchies. By and by a smart action commenced upon the hills that overlook Mahmokan, which cost the English about fifty in killed and wounded, and resulted in the defeat of the enemy. And

now, on the 2nd of September, Sale's brigade broke up; and, after a night's rest at Heemlah, joined head-quarters on the 3rd at Gundamuck. Here a fresh distribution of the army took place. It was told off into two divisions, of one of which Sir Robert Sale was put in command; while the other was given in charge to General MacCaskill. But MacCaskill was at the time so much of an invalid that he could travel only in a litter; and Brigadier Monteith assumed in consequence the command, for which, both by nature and education, he was eminently fitted.

It is not my intention to trace the onward progress of General Pollock's army. The ground which it traversed was familiar to the members of the brigade, with the gallant deeds of which I am alone concerned; and from stage to stage there was sharp fighting. For the Ghilzies defended their mountains at every point which offered such a position as their manner of warfare required, and harassed front, main body, and rear, with a desultory fire from every precipice. At Jugdulluck there was a warm encounter; the enemy had fortified the top of the pass, and maintained themselves stoutly, till the 9th and 13th regiments mounted the hills on either flank, and drove them from their entrenchments. In the same manner, skirmishing all the way, the column proceeded by Kuttysung, Sey Baba, and Barrikab, to Tizeen, where a day's halt occurred for the purpose of enabling the rear to close up. And very harrowing to the feelings of the soldiers was this long march. The narrow path by which they moved was strewn with the remains of Elphinstone's army. One upon another lay the dead; some of them reduced to the condition of mere skeletons; others clothed, and with the features still so entire, that by many of their old acquaintances they were recognised. Flocks of vultures and other birds of prey wheeled over the heads of the living, and seemed to claim the dead as their own; while the smell that arose, especially on the night air, was dreadful. Our gallant fellows looked upon the scene of slaughter, and wished for revenge; and they never suffered an opportunity of gratifying the desire to pass unimproved.

There were some sharp affairs of posts at Tizeen, which ended invariably in the repulse of the enemy; nevertheless, the halt which it was found necessary to order here had the effect of increasing the confidence of the Ghilzies not a little. They appeared

to imagine that, having got as far as this valley, the Feringhees distrusted their own power of penetrating beyond it. Wherefore Akbar Khan was sent for from a post which he had begun to fortify in the most difficult gorge of the Koord Cabul; and hastened with all his followers to join the array which the chiefs of Tizeen were drawing together. The position which they had chosen ran along the face and on the summits of the Huft Kothul. This is a cluster of mountains, seven in number, the highest of which rises to an elevation of nearly eight thousand feet above the level of the sea, and forms the ridge of that chain, which with various breaks may be said to extend all the way from Bootkak to Heemlah. The waters on either side run down in opposite directions; the road, which heretofore had been, except in the deep valleys, upon an ascent, changes, so as henceforth to go downwards. Moreover, as has been shown at length, while tracing the march of Sir Robert Sale's brigade to Jellalabad, the valley of Tizeen is closed in the rear, not less than in front, by precipitous rocks: wherefore the Afghans, assuming that the invaders had done their worst; that having penetrated thus far, they feared to go farther; not only assembled upon the Huft Kothul about fifteen thousand men, but threw a large body of men upon the rear of the valley, shutting up, as they imagined, their enemies in a trap. But they had miscalculated both the designs of the invaders and their own means of counteracting them: and in due time, after Pollock had assembled and refreshed his troops, he proceeded to convince them of their error.

The road from Tizeen to Koord Cabul passes over a shoulder of the Huft Kothul. The leading column, consisting of the first division, traversed it under the ordinary protection of an advanced guard, and suffered no molestation till they approached the point where the pathway attains its extreme altitude; but here such a storm of fire assailed them that the air rang with the hissing of the bullets as they passed. In a moment, the 13th to the right, the 2nd Queen's to the left, spread in skirmishing order over the bases of the hills, and clambered up, returning the fire as they best could, yet scarcely appearing to check their onward progress, while they did so. The enemy fought with great desperation, standing till but a few paces divided them from our

troops; and gave way even then only when the fixed bayonets gleamed before them, and they heard the shout wherewith the British infantry invariably preface a charge. Then might be seen a flight and a pursuit, the one winged by terror, the other animated to perseverance by a burning thirst of revenge. The 3rd Light Dragoons were let loose upon the fugitives. They soon overtook them, and hewed, right and left, as men do who have the deaths of their friends and comrades to atone for; and the whole summit of the hill, as well as the slope beyond it, and the road, and the declivities leading down to it, were strewed with the bodies of the slain. Two pieces of artillery, both originally belonging to Elphinstone's corps, were taken here, and Akbar, routed to his heart's content, felt that he was indeed powerless.

The battle of Tizeen, as it was the sternest, so it was the last endeavour which the Afghans made to save the capital. Not a shot was fired while the army, on the following day, threaded the frightful ravines of the Koord Cabul, doubly frightful now because of the heaps of dead bodies with which the narrow pathway was choked. And when, after the halt of a night at Bootkak, the columns again moved forward over the open plain, all men hoped, and rejoiced in the assurance, that the object of the expedition was gained. For already were the General's proclamations carried far and wide through the country. The people were invited to continue in their dwellings. They were warned against ill-using or carrying off the prisoners, and promised protection, if, by their behaviour, they should show themselves worthy of it, and both assurances were repeated as soon as the head-quarter tent was pitched on the race-course, within three English miles of the Balla Hissar of Cabul....

Though every precaution was taken to hinder the spread of a panic through the country, nobody was surprised to find that the impulse spread wider and wider as the army advanced. Not a human being had been met in all the way from Bootkak to Cabul, and now that the camp was set up outside the city walls, the city was found to be deserted. A few chiefs who either had been, or professed to have been friendly when the British army was in its difficulties, abode in their houses; and of the lowest of the people a good many remained to take their chance; but the bazaars were

deserted, the shops emptied of their contents, and the owners both of shops and wares fled, no one could tell whither. In like manner the Balla Hissar, abandoned by its garrison, stood with open gates to be dealt with as the stranger might determine. It was immediately occupied by detachments from different infantry regiments, whose measured tread brought echoes from the vaulted passages; and who having hoisted on its loftiest pinnacle the standard of England, took possession of such apartments as seemed best suited to their own convenience.

For obvious reasons it was desirable to reopen the markets of Cabul; and while fresh proclamations invited the dealers to return, evidence was afforded of the general's determination to respect the rights of persons and of property, by the steadiness with which he restrained his men from entering the city. Guards were placed at the different gates, and neither soldier nor camp follower was permitted to go beyond them, unless he produced a written pass or order, signed by the general of the brigade or division to which he was attached. The result was that the natives began, ere long, to anticipate a renewal of the policy of a former year. They began to come back, first by twos and threes, by and by a hundred or two at a time, and ultimately by thousands. Accordingly, before the expiration of many days, the bazaars became what they used to be, the shops were filled with goods, and the streets were crowded with people; between whom and the inhabitants of the camp a traffic was established, which proved for a while equally advantageous to both parties.

Meanwhile Akbar had fled, carrying with him the larger number of his prisoners. Some the abiders in Cabul refused to send in his train; and these consisting of fourteen persons, of whom two were ladies and ten children, were escorted into camp. It is impossible to describe the forlorn condition of these poor people—one the widowed mother of eight infants—or to do justice to the kindness and delicate consideration with which they were treated. Nevertheless, the recovery of so many seemed but to aggravate the feelings of those who mourned over friends and relatives still in the hands of the murderer of Sir William Macnaghten. Accordingly, intrigue and negotiation with large promises of money were set afloat in all quarters, and applied to

every one who was supposed to be approachable, through such a medium; and in due time matters were put in such a train as held out good promise of perfect success in the end.

Akbar Khan had retreated with the wreck of his army towards the Hindoo Koosh. He was heard of at Bameean on the 16th and 17th; and on the 18th the glad tidings spread through the camp, that one of his followers, Salee Mohammed by name, had been won over to betray his post, and was actually moving towards Cabul with the whole of the British prisoners. Sir Robert Sale had been observed by his officers that day to be unusually excited and restless. He was continually riding from his own tent to that of the General, and towards evening came back from one of these little journeys with the air of a man whose heart is full of deep emotion. His officers, who shared the anxieties of their chief, gathered round him; and when told that at length Lady Sale was safe, and that she and his widowed daughter Mrs. Sturt, were on the way to rejoin him, there arose a shout, which the men of the regiment soon took up, and which extended, as well as a knowledge of the circumstance that drew it forth, to the gallant 35th. It was a night of much joy, not unmixed with anxiety, in the camp; for the brigade knew that a force was to march at daybreak to meet the procession, and all were eager to have the privilege of being added to it.

How Lady Sale and her companions in misfortune had been carried from place to place at the will of the captor; how they fared in their captivity, and with what exceeding firmness they bore up against the trials to which they were exposed, are tales too well and too often told to require that I should repeat them. In like manner the narrative of their providential escape, just as they were on the eve of being carried whither the foot of European never could have followed, is familiar to the English public. Salee Mohammed, a chief of the tribe of Hazarees, had begun his political career, on the arrival of Lord Keane's army at Cabul, by espousing the cause of Shah Shujah. This he abandoned as soon as the tide of fortune seemed to set against him; and thenceforth became, for a while, one of the most active of Akbar Khan's partisans. But incapable of withstanding the influence of money, he was again won over for the second time

at a very critical moment in the progress of events. Having raised a strong force of his clansmen, he marched in the train of Akbar; and so ingratiated himself into his good graces, that the care of the prisoners was committed to him. Salee Mohammed desired no more. He had received one bribe, and had the assurance of another, and he now lingered with his charge till Akbar, having struck his tents, was proceeding at the head of the main body of his army through the Bameean pass into Balk. Salee now struck his tents in like manner, but instead of following in the track of Akbar, he doubled back through the hills, and by a circuitous route made his way towards Urghundee. Thither, on the 19th, Sale had proceeded at the head of his own regiment, and a force of artillery. Even Sale, however, was but the follower of Sir R. Shakespear, who, with five hundred Kuzylebashes, had pushed on to meet the prisoners; and afford them additional protection. But why go on with such details? On the 20th of September, leaving his camp at Urghundee, Sir Robert Sale proceeded as far as a place called Jubeaiz; whence, from the summit of a little pass, the captives were first seen, wending their way, peaceably and with apparent confidence, down the face of an opposite slope. Who will undertake to describe the emotions of all that witnessed or took part in that strange scene? The thunder of artillery told that day, not of the work of death in progress, but of its opposite. Friends met friends from whom they had long been parted. The wife threw herself into the arms of her husband; the daughter leaned upon her father's neck and wept; while a royal salute, fired from the horse artillery that had come to the rescue, called echoes from the distant hills which seemed to laugh and shout with joy as they spake.

CHAPTER XXIII.

Evacuation of Afghanistan.

WHILE Sale with his gallant followers conducted back their liberated friends in triumph, an expedition was fitted out by the commander-in-chief at Cabul; and sent to disperse a band of rebels which had gathered under the banner of a Kohistan chief, and established itself at Istaliff. Of the extreme beauty of that place, and of the surrounding country, I took occasion to speak while describing the movements of the force which headed back Dost Mohammed from Purandurrah. Standing upon the side of a mountain, which is overhung with gardens and orchards in terraces, Istaliff, both for the salubrity of its climate and the exquisite loveliness of its scenery, is without a rival in Central Asia; and being surrounded by walls, with towers here and there, so planted as to be very difficult of approach, it offers to the soldier a military position of no ordinary strength. There a considerable body of Afghans had drawn together; and a holy war being by Akbar's directions proclaimed, they gave out, from day to day, that they should presently advance upon Cabul, destroy the unbelievers, and liberate the place. They were anticipated in this generous purpose by the march of General MacCaskill and a division of the army towards their stronghold. A smart affair ensued, which ended, as all such were accustomed to do, in the total defeat of the enemy; and the town being entered sword in hand, it was given up to plunder. No lives were, however, taken after resistance ceased. A large number of women and children were, indeed, secured, and placed under guard, only that they might be sent back, without ransom, as soon as the fighting ceased, to their friends; but they were treated throughout with marked tenderness, neither insult nor injury being offered to them. It cannot be said, however, that much mercy was shown to the property of the people. Istaliff was the capital of a district which had rendered itself conspicuous

during the troubles of 1841 for the cruel and treacherous conduct of its chiefs and people to their European visitors. Here were cut off, while dwelling at peace in the midst of them, Lieutenant Rattray and Captain Codrington, both in the Company's service; and here, also, Major Pottinger sustained much suffering, his followers being slain, and himself escaping, covered with wounds, as if by a miracle. These things were not forgotten by the troops who forced an entrance that day into Istaliff; and it was this remembrance which urged them to the perpetration of a work of vengeance, which must continue to be felt as long as the present generation shall last: for they did not leave a house standing. Fire consumed both castle and cottage; and gardens, vineyards, orchards, &c., were all cut down. Had there been at hand sufficient means of transport, the victors would have returned to Cabul encumbered with spoil. As it was, they cast into the flames every article, no matter how costly, which was too cumbersome to be conveyed about the persons of the men.

Having thus re-established the prestige of British invincibility (for General Nott had marched in triumph from the side of Candahar, winning back Ghuznee, and overthrowing with great slaughter every armed body which ventured to face him), General Pollock made ready, in agreement with the orders under which he acted, to return to the British provinces. A son of Shah Shujah, Futteh Jung by name, had hoisted his standard over the Balla Hissar, and proclaimed himself king. Few men of any note rallied under it; and the weak young man was given distinctly to understand that he need not look to the Feringhees for the support which his own countrymen withheld from him. At the same time the Balla Hissar was freely given up to him; and because he besought that it might be spared, the General neither broke down the walls nor suffered a torch to be applied to the wood-work. But every gun that was found in the place he caused to be destroyed; and blew up as many of his own battering-train as he found that he was without strength of cattle to drag through the passes. Having settled these points, General Pollock gave directions for inflicting upon the guilty capital the punishment which it deserved. With natural vanity Akbar Khan had built a mosque to commemorate the destruction of

Elphinstone's force, to which he gave the name of the Feringhee Mosque, and which his flatterers affected to regard as one of the wonders of the world. It was levelled with the ground; and then followed the blowing up of the bazaars, the burning of chiefs' houses, the destruction of the city gates, and, last of all, a conflagration which spread everywhere till the waters of the river stayed it. That the work of plunder could be wholly stopped, amid the confusion attendant on such proceedings, was not to be expected. In spite of guards, camp-followers and soldiers made their way into the burning town, and loaded themselves with articles, scarcely one of which they were able, after the march began, to carry beyond the encampment. And here and there accidents occurred, of which it speaks well in praise of the discipline of the force that they were not multiplied fifty-fold.

The work of destruction began upon the 7th of October. It continued all that day and the next, and throughout both nights; and, indeed, till the mountains of the Bootkak shut it from them, the soldiers of Sale's brigade saw the whole face of the sky red with the flames which they had contributed to raise. But Sale's brigade did not linger long near the ruins of the Afghan capital; for on the 12th of October the army began its march towards the provinces. It moved by divisions, the first, to which the garrison of Jellalabad was attached, leading. It threaded the passes, not altogether unopposed, yet without sustaining any serious inconvenience; and having abandoned and destroyed a few heavy guns, which, for lack of draft animals, could not be carried forward, came in, in due time, to Jellalabad. That city shared the fate of Cabul and Ghuznee: it was razed to the ground; and the sick being moved forward, and the detachments gathered in which had heretofore protected them and maintained posts of halt for the main body, the whole proceeded through the Khyber and the Punjaub to the Sutlej.

So ended a war begun for no wise purpose, carried on with a strange mixture of rashness and timidity, and brought to a close, after suffering and disaster, without much of glory attaching either to the government which directed, or the great body of the troops which waged it. One portion of the army of the Indus did, indeed, win for itself a fame which shall be deathless.

The garrison of Jellalabad well earned the epithet which the Governor-General, by his proclamation, bestowed upon it. But as soon as we avert our eyes from the heroic deeds of that handful of men, there is not much in the military history of those times on which we shall care to rest them. Doubtless, the massacre of the Koord Cabul was avenged. By the destruction of their chief towns, and the devastation of their villages and orchards, the Afghans were taught that England is powerful to punish as well as to protect. And in all the encounters with the armed men who resisted them, our soldiers proved themselves to be both dauntless and enduring. But not one benefit, either political or military, has England acquired by the war. Indeed, our evacuation of the country resembled almost as much the retreat of an army defeated as the march of a body of conquerors, seeing that to the last our flanks and rear were attacked, and that such baggage as we did save, we saved by dint of hard fighting. Nevertheless, the gates of Somnauth were carried back to the land whence Nadir had removed them; and British India proclaimed, what the whole world good-naturedly allowed, that we had redeemed our honour, and were once more victorious.

THE END.

London: Printed by W. CLOWES and SONS, Stamford Street.

LETTERS

FROM

M A D R A S,

DURING THE YEARS 1836—1839.

BY A LADY.

LONDON:
JOHN MURRAY, ALBEMARLE STREET.
1846.

London: Printed by William Clowes and Sons, Stamford Street.

INTRODUCTION.

THE public attention has of late been so much directed to our East Indian possessions, that any particulars concerning that portion of the globe may probably find a welcome from the general reader. It is under this impression that the following Letters are offered to the public. They were written during the years 1836, 37, 38, and 39, by a young married lady, who had accompanied her husband to Madras for the first time, and they are (with the necessary omission of family details) printed verbatim from the originals. This will account for some abruptness of transition, and also for a colloquial familiarity of style, which might easily have been remedied if it had not been thought more advisable to give the correspondence in its genuine unsophisticated state.

Those who open the volume with an expectation of finding details relative to the wars and vicissitudes which have lately excited universal interest will be disappointed, as the writer quitted India in 1840. Neither did she devote much attention to public affairs, though she occasionally notices the apprehensions and opinions that were prevalent at the time. But first impressions, when they occur incidentally in a familiar narrative, are amusing, and may sometimes be useful: such, indeed, con-

stitute the chief feature in these Letters. The reader will also find in them many traits of national character; and some descriptions of the Author's intercourse with the natives of Hindostan, and of the endeavours in which she shared to improve their condition.

It is proper to observe that, whenever European individuals are mentioned, fictitious names have been assigned to them, and other precautions taken to prevent the personal application of such passages.

CONTENTS.

LETTER THE FIRST.

PAGE

Outward passage—Bay of Biscay—Combination of noises—Cure for sea-sickness—Passengers—Land at Madeira—Visit to a convent—Re-embarkation 1

LETTER THE SECOND.

Letters for England—Amusements on board—The Tropics—The "Wave" emigrant-vessel—Cape Verd—Fire-works—Slave-brig—Whales 4

LETTER THE THIRD.

A Triton—Letter from Neptune—Ceremonies on crossing the Line—Catching albatrosses 7

LETTER THE FOURTH.

Tristan d'Acunha—Governor Glass—Land at the Cape—Cape Town—Boa constrictor—English Church—Expenses—Society—Political Parties—Schools—View from the Kloof—Return on board . . 11

LETTER THE FIFTH.

Gales of wind—Passengers from the Cape—Landing at Madras—Catamarans—Witch of Fife's voyage—Curiosities—Snake-charmers—Native servants—"Griffins"—Visitors—A native's advice—Native servility—Treatment of servants—Jargon spoken by the English to the natives 16

LETTER THE SIXTH.

PAGE

Bishop Corrie—Schools—A Moonshee—Lessons in Tamul—Dinner-parties—General laziness—Letters from Natives 22

LETTER THE SEVENTH.

Native entertainment—Mohammedan dancing-girls—Concert—Hindoo dancing-girl—Conjurer—Supper—Hindoo speech 26

LETTER THE EIGHTH.

Anxiety for despatches—Madras scenery—Moonshee's letter—Native ignorance—Religion—Death of the Bishop—Dishonesty of native servants—Trial of a thief—Reasons for submitting to a false charge . 30

LETTER THE NINTH.

Entomologising—St. Thomé—Temperature—Wedding—Tamul translation—The tailor—Mohurrum—Excessive heat 35

LETTER THE TENTH.

Preparing for a journey—Sail for Coringa—Land at Vizagapatam—Arrive at Rajahmundry—Law-officers—Cholera—Domestic arrangements—Peons—A traveller 39

LETTER THE ELEVENTH.

Residents—Snakes—Hyænas—Thugs—Employment of time—Schemes—*Fishing* for wood—The Barrack-sergeant—Poor travellers—Visit from a Rajah—A Cobra capello—Snake-charmer 45

LETTER THE TWELFTH.

Domestic expenses—An amah—The butler's bills—Indian mode of visiting—Religious service—Visit from "Penny-Whistle Row"—A dialogue 51

LETTER THE THIRTEENTH.

PAGE

Native school—Female education—Leopards—Hyænas—Letter from the Moonshee—M. d'Arzel—French adventures—An ensign and his pony —School opened—Utility of Schools 56

LETTER THE FOURTEENTH.

Visit to "Penny-Whistle"—Dratcharrum—The Rajah's palace—Method of dismissing visitors—Dinner—Procession—Pagoda—Amusements —The Rajah's Wife—A new tribe 61

LETTER THE FIFTEENTH.

Instance of faithfulness—Progress of the school—"Curry-and-rice" Christians—Want of missionaries—Topics of conversation—Visit to Narsapoor—The missionaries and their wives—Palanquin travelling —Return home 68

LETTER THE SIXTEENTH.

Discussion on divinity—Interruption to the school—Shore's 'Notes on Indian affairs'—English incivility to natives—Magazines and reviews —Pagoda service—Progress of the school—Snake-poison—Remedies for snake-bites—Dexterity of snake-charmers 75

LETTER THE SEVENTEENTH.

Indian toy—Rule against accepting presents—Dishonesty of rich natives —Company—Military and civilians—Hindoo tradition—A Moonshee translator—Lending-library—School lectures—Indian spring . . 80

LETTER THE EIGHTEENTH.

Religious discussion—Parables—Fondness of natives for metaphysical subtleties—Heads and tails—A native's notion of "charity"—Government circular—Salutes in honour of the native religions—Presents to idols by Government—Offerings to idols—Tricks of the Bramins—Idolatry encouraged by Government—School-prizes—Motives for learning English—A "tame boy"—Invitations to officers . . 86

LETTER THE NINETEENTH.

PAGE

Samuldavee—Native dialects—Moonshee's method of reading the Church Prayer-book—"First-caste" monkeys—Jackals—Bramins' reasons for preserving idols—A dishonest Zemindar—"Don" and the monkey . 92

LETTER THE TWENTIETH.

Filling of the rivers—Native indifference to truth on religious subjects—Progress of the school—Moonshee's definition of idolatry—Quaint translations—Land-wind—Moonshee's conscience—Boasting of natives—Notions of honesty—Devotedness to employers—A false alarm . 96

LETTER THE TWENTY-FIRST.

Snakes—Green bugs—Thugs—Trial of a Moonsiff—Dutch settlement—Black bugs—Return to Rajahmundry—A *cool* visitor—Captain and Mrs. C—— —Exchange of presents—Instance of encouragement given to idolatry—Emigration of Hill Coolies—Proposed "Europe" shop—The Dussera—Prospect of war—Visitors—An eclipse—Importance attached to employment in a Government office—Indian "hospitality"—Misgovernment—Moonshee's account of the eclipse—Cause of superior progress of some of the scholars—National music—News from Europe 100

LETTER THE TWENTY-SECOND.

Delay of the post—Distress of natives—Sale of grain—Captain and Mrs. Kelly—Anxiety for letters—A lazy Moorman—The Hakeem and the idol—State of the country—Shipwreck—Female education—Robbers—Scarcity—Major C——'s drawings—Bone-stones—Method of teaching—Visit from "Penny-Whistle"—Progress of the school—Management of children 109

LETTER THE TWENTY-THIRD.

Decrease of the famine—Mode of distributing charity—Proposed native reading-room—Gentoo newspaper—A ball—Narsapoor missionaries—Reading-room opened—School-rewards—A Sunnyassee—Circulating library 115

LETTER THE TWENTY-FOURTH.

PAGE

Arrive at Samuldavee—Magic lantern—Schools—The Collector and the Swamy—Christenings—A proxy—Abolition of the pilgrim-tax—Decline of idolatry—Want of elementary books—Schools—Letter to the editor of a Madras newspaper on native education—Return of plenty—Monsoon—A new school—Rajah Twelfth-cake—Society for protecting the natives—Native manner of ending letters . . . 119

LETTER THE TWENTY-FIFTH.

Birthday feast—School at Samuldavee—Converts—Rule of promotion—Appointment—Chittoor—Masulipatam—Ramiahpatam—Arrive at Madras—Native love of finery—Female Orphan Asylum—Education—The "Caste" question—Addictedness of natives to perjury—Death of Runjeet Singh—Suttee—English encouragement of idolatry—Rebellions—"Chit"-writing—Etiquette of visiting 129

LETTER THE TWENTY-SIXTH.

Indian fever—Employment of a thorough Madras lady—Chittoor—An unwelcome arrival—Bangalore—The Pettah—Inhabitants—A Moorish horseman—Architecture—Hindoo mythology—Reported conversion of a Hindoo tribe 137

LETTER THE TWENTY-SEVENTH.

Climate—European ladies in Bangalore—Conspiracy at Kurnool—Unjust proceeding at Rajahmundry—Storm on the coast—Poverty of the people—A "crack" Collector—End of the conspiracy—Return of the troops—Expectations of a war with China—Conclusion . . 142

LETTERS FROM MADRAS.

LETTER THE FIRST.

Bay of Biscay, August 17th.

I BEGIN now, in hopes of meeting a ship, to tell you our histories. This is the first day I have been well enough to write; and I am not very steady yet, as you may perceive, but still we are all exceedingly well—*for the Bay of Biscay.*

We have persuaded my brother Frank to go with us as far as Madeira, and take his chance of finding a homeward-bound ship.

The Captain says he never had so smooth a passage, but there is a good deal of swell here. The wind allows of our passing outside the roughest part of this unfortunate Bay, which is a very great advantage.

Mrs. M—— was quite right in advising us to take the round-house. There is much more air than in the lower cabins, and the noises do not annoy me at all. We all go to bed at nine o'clock, so that it is no hardship to be awakened at five. Certainly, the first morning, when I woke, there did seem to be as quaint a combination and succession of noises as could well be imagined. Pigs, dogs, poultry, cow, cats, sheep, all in concert at sunrise. Then the nursery noises: Major O'Brien twittering to his baby—the baby squealing—the nurse singing and squalling to it—the mamma cooing to it. Then the cuddy noises: all the servants quarrelling for their clothes, &c. &c. So on till breakfast-time.

I was too sick to laugh then, and I am used to it now. Then, when I was as sick and cross as possible, in came my Irish maid Freeman with a great plate of beefsteak and potatoes. I ex-

claimed in despair at the very sight of it, "Oh, what *is* all that for? O dear me!"—"Sure, it's for you to ate, ma'am."—"Eat! I can't eat."—"Oh, you *must* ate it all, ma'am: you've no notion how well you would be if you would only ate hearty!" Her cramming was a great bore, but she cured me by it. Frank is nearly mad: he is in such raptures with everything on board, I think he will end by turning ship's surgeon. The first night his hammock was slung under the doctor's. The poor doctor complained to me in the morning how very odd it was he could not keep his cot steady,—he had been swinging about, he said, all night. Frank confided to me privately the reason, *viz.* that the doctor looked so tempting over his head, he could not resist swinging him at every opportunity. However, next night he was found out, for the doctor peeped over the top of his cot and caught him in the fact; and when Mr. Darke, the second mate, came into the cabin, poor Dr. Lowe exclaimed, "Here, Darke! I could not imagine why I could not keep my cot steady all night, and at last I looked over the top, when I found this precious fellow swinging me!"

Our passengers are Mr. and Mrs. Wilde (he is going to St. Helena as Chief Justice; they go with us to the Cape, and there wait for a homeward-bound ship to take them to St. Helena); —the O'Briens;—Miss Shields, good humoured and lively, going out as a missionary;—Miss Knight, sick and solemn;—several Irish girls apparently on their promotion;—Mr. Harvey, who plays chess, and takes care of his flowers: he has them in an hermetically sealed glass case, which he is taking to the Cape; —a number of hitherto unnamed gentlemen, who sit down to eat and drink, and rise up to play;—one or two pretty boys, who saunter about with Lord Byron in hand;—and Mr. Stevens, the missionary, who is good and gentle, but so sick that we have not yet made much acquaintance: he is getting better, and talks of reading the service next Sunday.

August 23rd. FUNCHAL.—Here we are on shore again, in this beautiful Madeira, and all excessively thankful and happy to be out of our ship, though it is very hot on shore, compared with the real sea air: it has been quite cold at sea. Our chief employment just now is eating figs and grapes, and planning our excursions for to-morrow. We have been landed about an hour,

and are to remain here till Thursday. Frank is gone to the consul to get a passport, and inquire about a ship to take him home. We are grown pretty well used to the life on board ship. Everybody is good-natured and civil. Captain Faulkner is our chief crony, but we are all good friends. I am beginning greatly to enjoy some parts of our sea-life, especially the bright blue water, and the bright yellow moonlight,—such colours as no shoregoing people ever saw.

August 25th.—Madeira is very lively, very like Lucca: the country, and the heat, and the people, are Italy over again. We have just been to visit a convent here. There is not much to be seen. The nuns spoke to us through a double grating and sold us flowers. Nobody is allowed to see the inside of the convent. They spoke nothing but Portuguese. They came to me, chirping, and asking me to talk to them, and to tell them something; but, unluckily, though I could *understand* what they said to me, I could not answer a word; so we were obliged to be content with nodding and bobbing, and looking friendly at each other. We have taken some beautiful rides and gathered nosegays of wild flowers—heliotropes, roses, fuchsias, and every variety of geraniums. To-night we go on board again, leaving Frank here to find his way home by the first ship. We shall be very anxious to hear his adventures: I am afraid he may be obliged to go round by Lisbon, for no English ship is expected just at present. The Captain has sent his summons for us, so I must say "Good-bye."

LETTER THE SECOND.

August 29th, Lat. 22° N., Lon. 23½° W.

THE Captain has just told us that he expects to pass a ship every day, so we are all setting to work getting our letters ready, as he only allows five minutes for sealing and sending off. I hope, by the time you receive this letter, Frank will have arrived safely at home, and not the worse for his journey. Pray make him write to me directly; I shall be quite uneasy till I hear from him, for we left him at Madeira quite ignorant of what his plans might be. Everybody on board was very sorry to lose him, and they all sing his praises with much good taste.

We are now entering the Tropics, and the weather is still cool, owing to the constant breeze. We have had no calms, but on an average have made about one hundred and fifty miles in the twenty-four hours. I suspect I shall never get over the sea-sickness in rough weather, and I almost give up the hope of employing myself, for I really can do nothing; but as long as I keep quiet, and do not interrupt my idleness, I am much better. Towards evening, like all other sea-sick people, I grow very brisk, and can walk the quarter-deck, and chirp with anybody. Our chief adventures since we left Madeira have been the sight of flying-fish and porpoises. I made a good many sketches at Madeira, but cannot work much towards finishing them. I have learnt two or three Tamul verbs, and read different bits of different books—made the Captain teach me now and then a little geography, and the first mate a little astronomy—finished Melville's 'University Sermons'—chatted with our fellow-passengers—and that is all I have done; and in fact that is the way most of the ladies spend their time on board ship. We are too uncomfortable to be industrious, and too much interrupted and unsettled to be busy.

September 3rd.—We are beginning to be aware of our latitude. The trade-winds have left us, and we have a strong suspicion of a calm coming on; but, unluckily, *calm* does not

mean *smooth*, for the rocking and rolling are just as bad as when we had plenty of wind. The thermometer now stands at 78° in the day, and higher, I should think, in the night; but our cabin is certainly the coolest of any, and I have not yet found the heat unbearable. The gentlemen are all "rigged Tropical," with their collars turned down, and small matters of neckcloths; —grisly Guys some of them turn out! The very sea looks tepid, and goes past with a lazy roll, as if it was too languid to carry us on.

We live in hopes of catching a shark: one was seen this morning, but he was too cunning for us. We are also on the look-out for an albatross. When we first sailed, all the gentlemen protested against the horror of ever shooting an albatross, and quoted the Ancient Mariner at every opportunity; but since the 1st of September, the recollections of the shooting season have greatly softened down the sentiment, and they are now ready for all the albatrosses that may make their appearance. They say "they think that old fellow of Coleridge's must have been a horrid bore." We passed the Cape de Verd Islands the day before yesterday, but did not go on shore. They are not much of a sight.

September 9th.—Yesterday we overtook a ship going to New South Wales, filled with settlers and live stock. A good many of our gentlemen went on board, and brought back miserable accounts of the discomforts of the ship compared with ours. This ship (the "Wave") left England before us, but we overtake all the ships. Mr. Kenrick, our first mate, says he thinks *he* should feel quite mortified at being in a ship which let others pass her, but he supposes it is all habit! The "Wave" had felt a good deal of bad weather from going inside the Cape de Verd Islands, instead of outside, as we did. Captain —— says he never settles his course till he sees how the weather promises; and this time he thought the outside would be best—which we all consider very clever of our skipper. At night we had a show of fireworks, that the two ships might know each other's places: it was really very pretty. We, being magnificent, sent up two blue-lights and two skyrockets: the blue-lights were the best; it looked as if the whole concern—ship, sails, and sea —were playing at snap-dragon: altogether it was the best ad-

venture we have had. I contrived to creep forward to see it, but I have been ill and keeping to my cabin lately. I sit with the door open, which gives me plenty of air: and if I spy any of the ladies looking neighbourly, as if they thought of "sitting with me," I just shut my eyes, which answers as well as "sporting my oak," and does not exclude the air; but they must think I get plenty of sleep!

September 24th.—Yesterday, at three o'clock in the morning, we came up with a French brig bound from Madagascar to Rio. She was, as the sailors said, "A most beautiful little craft!" and looked to great advantage in the moonlight: I put my head out of the port to admire her and listen to the conversation, little suspecting her real character; but next morning the skipper told us there was no doubt she was a piratical slaver, and that, if we had been a ship of war, we should have stopped and examined her; but we are not strong enough for such adventures, so she and her poor slaves are gone on. Next morning we saw two whales playing in the waters, swimming, blowing, jumping, turning head over heels, and pleasuring themselves, as if they had been minnows.

October 1st.—News of a homeward-bound ship in the distance, so I must get ready.

LETTER THE THIRD.

TO HER YOUNGER BROTHER.

HEREWITH you will receive a full, true, and particular account of the ceremony of shaving on crossing the Line, which you are requested to communicate to "Master Frank," whose absence was most particularly regretted on the occasion. The night before, we heard some one call out that a sail was in sight, upon which I scrambled out on deck *in* the greatest possible hurry, in hopes of an opportunity of sending a letter to Mamma. When I got out, all the officers began to laugh at me, and I found that the announcement was merely some of the Tritons informing Neptune of the arrival of our ship. About an hour afterwards, a Triton suddenly appeared on the quarter-deck, dressed up in oil-cloth and rags, and bits of rope, &c. &c., bringing a letter from Neptune to the Captain, and waiting for an answer.

The Captain read the letter aloud: it was very civil, saying how happy Neptune was to see the Captain again, and that he would come on board at one o'clock next day, and have the pleasure of introducing any of the youngsters to his dominions: he condoled with the ladies who had been suffering from sea-sickness, and hoped to have the honour of seeing them all in the morning.

The Captain sent his compliments in return, with a cordial invitation to Neptune for the next day, only begging that he would use the youngsters very civilly.

Triton then took a glass of grog and made his bow. Then a lighted tar-barrel was sent off from the ship, supposed to be Triton's boat going off, and the first mate lighted him home with blue-lights and skyrockets. Altogether it had a very fine effect. Next morning the usual tricks were played on the novices. One young midshipman was up before light "to look out for the Line." Another *saw* it, as well he might, a hair

having been put inside his telescope. Another declared he felt the bunt of the Line at the moment we crossed it. When I came out I beheld a great sail stretched across the deck, just in front of the main-mast, so that we could see nothing, except that on the other side of it there was an immense slop oozing out from something, and in front was written "Neptune's original easy shaving-shop." At the appointed time the sale was hauled away, and we saw all the contrivances. At the starboard gangway there was a sail hung across two masts, stretched from the bulwark to the long-boat, so as to make a great bag, filled about four or five feet deep with water: there was also a ladder by which to help the victims in on one side, but nothing to help them out on the other. On the other side of the ship were all Neptune's party, hallooing and bawling with speaking-trumpets. Neptune himself was not a bad figure. Face and legs painted black and white, and dressed up *à la* Guy, with oil-cloth and bits of rope and yarn hanging on each side of his head. He sat in his car with his wife and daughter, who were merely dressed up in gowns and bonnets begged of the maids. The car was drawn by eight Tritons with painted legs, and black horns on their heads. Neptune was accompanied by his secretary, his doctor, and his *bear*, who was, by far, the best of the set, dressed in sheep-skins, and held by two Tritons.

We were all on the poop, to be out of the way of the mess; and all the gentlemen who had not crossed the Line before had taken care to dress conformably, in jerseys and trowsers, and no stockings. Presently all the party came aft, and Neptune and the Captain had a conversation concerning the news of the ship and Neptune's own private history. "How are you off for fish, Mr. Neptune?" "Very badly, indeed, sir: I've had nothing these two months but a bit of an old soldier who was thrown overboard; and he was so tough I could not eat him." Bear began to growl. "Can't you keep that beast quiet?" said Neptune. Tritons tugged at bear. Bear sprawled and flounced, knocked down two men, all rolling in the slop together; at last Tritons tugged bear into order. The Captain desired Neptune to proceed to business: so the bear got into the sail, that being his domain, in order to duck the victims. The barber brought out his razor and shaving-pot, which were an old saw and

a tar-brush, and established himself on the top of the ladder; the doctor at the bottom, with a box of tar-pills and a smelling-bottle, with the cork stuck full of pins; and all the Tritons with buckets of water in their hands. The two first mates went upon deck "*to see fair play*," as I was told. Of course, fair play is always a jewel, but in the present case it proved rather a rough diamond; for before many minutes were over Mr. Darke had a bucket of water in his hands, as hard at work as anybody; and Mr. Kenrick was mounted on the top of the hay, working a water-pipe in full play. Then a Triton came on the poop to summon down the passengers, and began with Captain Faulkner.

As soon as he got on deck they received him with buckets of water, and hunted him up the ladder and into the bear's dominions. They had orders not to shave the gentlemen, only to duck them, which hurt nobody. Then came a scuffle between gentleman and bear, which ended by both going under water together. Then bear's work was done, and gentleman had to scramble out how he could, people being stationed on the other side with buckets of water, "a dissuading of the victim:" however, he got free at last, and was quite ready to help drown all the others, as their turn came round. Young Temple managed best: he was so strong and active that the great bear (who was the most powerful man in the ship) could not get him under the water at all; but he kicked the barber down the ladder, and then, in spite of the water-pipe playing in his face, sprang on to the bear's back, like a monkey, and with one more leap cleared bear, bath, and buckets, and was in the midst of the liberated party, ready to take his share of the fun without having been touched by anybody. After they had settled all the stranger gentlemen, they took the midshipmen, and then the sailors. The gentlemen and midshipmen were all very good sport, but the sailors grew rather savage with each other, and especially when they came to shaving with tar and their rusty saw. The end of all was *Samson*: Samson is a very little boy, who had a name of his own when he came on board, but it is quite forgotten now, and he is always called Samson, because he is so small and weak. They shaved him very gently and good-naturedly, holding him on their knees, as the monkey did Gulliver, and then bathed him,

and handed him over from one to another just like a baby: the poor little thing, partly frightened and partly amused, looked as if he scarcely knew whether to laugh or to cry; so he did both. This was the whole concern, I think.

We have seen plenty of whales and shoals of porpoises, and caught four albatrosses. They catch them by *fishing* with a line and a bait: the albatross comes peering at the bait in hopes of its being a fish, entangles himself in the line, and is drawn on deck quite easily, unhurt: when they are on deck they look about them and squall: they are rather stupid: they will not eat, but snap at anybody who is civil to them. They patter about with their great web feet, and seem to like to watch what is going on, but they are not really tame, only stupid: they are about the size of a large turkey, and have very long bills; some are all grey, but the largest are white and grey: they are rather handsome birds. Three of those we caught were set at liberty, but one was killed, to be stuffed. I am trying to get some of his feathers for Frank. Do not forget you promised to write to me. Be sure and send me off a letter as soon as ever you have taken your degree, for I shall be most particularly anxious to hear of that grand event.

Tell me everything you can about all at home. The more trifles and the less worth telling they seem to you, the more valuable to me at such a distance.

LETTER THE FOURTH.

* * * * * *

October 6th.

YESTERDAY we arrived at Tristan d'Acunha: very few ships touch there, on account of its being out of the way; but occasionally, as was the case with us, the wind allows of it, and good-natured skippers are glad when it so happens, on account of the poor Robinson Crusoes who live there.

Tristan d'Acunha is an extinct volcano, so steep that it seems to rise perpendicularly from the sea: the Captain told me it was eight thousand feet high. It is almost a bare rock, but here and there are patches of ground which can be cultivated. In Bonaparte's time, Lord Castlereagh took a fancy that the French might make it useful as an intermediate point of communication with St. Helena: sailors say it was an absurd notion, for that the winds and currents make it impossible for any ship to sail from the one island to the other. However, Lord C. established a corporal and party of soldiers to take care of the island. When all fear of Boney was over, they were sent for home; but some of them had grown so fond of their desert island, that they begged leave to remain, and here they have been these twenty years—Corporal Glass, now styled the Governor, and five of his men, with their six wives, and among them thirty-two children. It was not possible for us to go on shore, but Glass and four of his men came off to see us. They looked very healthy and comfortable—cared not a *sous* for anything out of their island—and did not ask one question concerning anything outside their own little rock. The Captain gave them a good supper and plenty of valuable presents, and everybody made up a parcel of clothes or some little oddments. They said what they most wanted was nails, as the wind had lately blown down their houses. They have fifty head of cattle and a hundred sheep; a little corn, twelve acres of potatoes, plenty of apples and pears, and "*ecco tutto!*" I was curious to know whether old Glass was master, and whether the

others minded him; but he said no one was master; that the men never quarrel, but the women do; that they have no laws nor rules, and are all very happy together; and that no one ever interferes with another. Old Glass does a great deal of extra work; he is schoolmaster to the children, and says many of his scholars can read the Bible "quite pretty." He is also chaplain, —buries and christens, and reads the service every Sunday, "all according to the Church of England, Sir." They had only Blair's Sermons, which they have read every Sunday for the last ten years, ever since they have possessed them; but the old man said, very innocently, "We do not understand them yet: I suppose they are too good for us." Of course they were well supplied with books before they left us. They make all their own clothes out of canvas given them by the whalers; they sew them with twine, and they looked very respectable: but they said it was not so easy to dress the ladies, and they were exceedingly glad of any old clothes we could rummage out for them. Their shoes are made of seal-skin: they put their feet into the skin while it is moist, and let it dry to the shape of the foot, and it turns out a very tidy shoe.

After they had collected all the "incoherent odds and ends" we could find for them, and finished their supper, they went off again in a beautiful little boat given them by a whaler. The Skipper gave the Governor a salute of one gun, two blue-lights, and two rockets; and they treated us with a bonfire from the shore. I was sorry for several things I had left behind, which would have been treasures to Mrs. Glass, especially worsted for knitting.

These South Seas are much worse than the Bay of Biscay; nothing but rolling by day and by night: but we are all looking forward to a week at the Cape to set us right again.

October 19th. CAPE OF GOOD HOPE.—We landed here on Sunday morning, and were very happy to find ourselves on shore. We are to stay a week, and have hired horses, and mean to ride every day.

Cape Town is just like the Dutch toy-towns—straight streets; white houses of only two stories, with flat roofs; trees in almost every street. The place is filled with English, Dutch, Hottentots, Malays, Parsees, fleas, and bugs; the last appear to be the

principal inhabitants and the oldest settlers. At first we got into a Dutch boarding-house, which Frank would have called the "Hotel de Bugs;" now we are in an English lodging, much cleaner; only we have to wait on ourselves a good deal.

On leaving the ship we all divided into separate parties, as at Madeira: ours consists of ourselves, Misses Shields and Knight, Captain Faulkner, and Mr. Temple. Mr. Temple is a tame boy, whom Captain F. looks after, for fear he should get into scrapes on shore—going out as a cadet. He is very merry, good-natured, and hungry; and his company and pretty fresh face come very natural to me, and remind me of my brothers. I especially like him when he is very hungry.

We all went yesterday to see a live boa constrictor: he was the most horrible creature I ever saw; thirty-three feet long, greenish and brownish, and with a few silver scales, but the most detestable countenance you can imagine. If the Lady Geraldine's eyes were like his when they shrunk in her head, I do not wonder at anything that happened to Christabel.

I hear there is a Hottentot infant-school here, which I mean to go and see; but we make all our distant excursions first; we have been about fifteen miles into the country. It is not so pretty as Madeira, but there are one or two magnificent views: the chief characteristics of the scenery are high rocks, green grass, and white sand, but the white sand is entirely covered with flowers—English hothouse flowers, growing wild.

We went to the English church twice on Sunday—a pretty church, built by the English residents, with a respectable High-church clergyman—somewhat dull. There is a Sunday-school belonging to the church, and taught principally by English ladies. Here are plenty of Methodist chapels; the Wesleyans are said to be the best.

There is a very poor museum; but I bought at it a couple of ugly shells for the C——s. I hope they will not break in coming. Mr. Harvey, who is very scientific, says they are curious, and "right to have:" they are land-shells—Achatina.

Papa always likes to know how a place would answer to live at; so tell him that here there are three prices: one cheap, for Dutch; one dear, for English; and one dearest, for visitors: we pay the dearest, of course; and we get six mutton-chops for

fourpence halfpenny, and everything else in proportion. Houses are dear, and society baddish—second-rate—with a great deal of quarrelling concerning Colonial politics. Instead of Whigs and Tories, they have the Caffre party and the Government party, who will scarcely speak to each other.

We dined yesterday with some people named Wilderspin—queer, and good, and civil: they have been many years at the Cape, and are most curiously adrift as to English matters. They asked whether O'Connell was still "celebrated in England?" whether he was received in good society? whether party-spirit ran high? whether there were many disputes among Church-people and Dissenters? &c.

I saw at the Wilderspins' a Miss Bazacot, who is here superintending the schools: she seems really clever, and minding her schools well. The Hottentots are very willing to come, both to week-day and Sunday schools. English, Malay, and Hottentot children are all taught together. At one of the schools there was a little Malay girl, who had learned to read, but was very dull at learning her tasks by heart, when suddenly she grew uncommonly bright, and knew all her texts, chapter and verse, better than any child in the school: when the mistress made inquiries into the cause of this great improvement, she found that the creature had taught her old Malay father to read, and he in return used to take immense pains in teaching the child her texts, till they were thoroughly driven into her head: she taught him to read and to pray; and now, every night before he goes to bed, he repeats his prayers and *the rules of the school!* I think the innocence of repeating the rules is very pretty.

I have got a Malay cap, for Frank's private admiration: they are high pointed things, made of straw and wicker-work, very uncouth, but picturesque-looking, especially on the boatmen.

We have been up the Kloof. I long to go up Table Mountain, but it is thought unsafe. When the cloud that they call the Table-cloth comes down, people are often lost in the fog. There is a magnificent view from the top of the Kloof—Cape Town, and the plain, and the hills on one side; and on the other only the sea and the rocks—but such sea, and such rocks, that anything else would be but an interruption, frittering away their grandeur. It is a sort of Chine, as they call the openings between

the hills in the Isle of Wight: the side on which we stood, covered with the beautiful silver-tree; and, directly opposite, the immense rock of Table Mountain overhung by its cloud, and the sea at its base, so far below, that the roar of the breakers round Green Point is only a murmur that just softens the silence. To-morrow we go on board again, leaving here our fellow-passengers, Mr. and Mrs. Wilde and Mr. Harvey. We shall all be sorry to part with them: their cabins are taken by people returning from the Cape to Madras, and we shall think ourselves very fortunate if our new companions are as agreeable and friendly as those we lose.

* * * * * *

LETTER THE FIFTH.

Madras, December 19th.

HERE we are at last, in our cousin Staunton's house, safe and well. He and his wife very kind and friendly, and I like all that I have seen of the place and the people. We are most happy and thankful to be on shore. The latter part of our voyage was very wearisome. After leaving the Cape we had a constant succession of gales of wind, very often contrary, and what the sailors called "a chopping sea," pitching and tossing us every way at once; and whenever we asked whether there was any hope of a change, the sailors answered, "No, there seems a fresh hand at the bellows." Then we had calms where we did not expect them, and the Captain said there had been a hurricane somewhere, which had "upset all the winds." Then many of the passengers grew tired of one another, and squabbled a little for amusement, as it is said they always do after passing the Cape; and though the skipper used to harangue concerning the affecting scenes he always witnessed on the passengers leaving the ship, nobody seemed to agree with him. The passengers we took in at the Cape were chiefly officers in the Indian army, who went out as cadets before they had learnt much, and since that time had pretty well forgotten the little they knew. They might have been divided into two classes—those who knew their declensions, and those who did not. They were particularly fond of grammatical discussions, and quite eager about them,—such as whether any English words were really derived from the Latin; whether *regiment* is to be considered as a word of three syllables or two; whether *lunatic* comes from the French, because "*loon*" is French for moon, &c. They used also to extend their acquirements by the study of navigation. After breakfast the captain and officers always took an observation of the sun, technically called "taking a *sight*." Then the passengers all began doing

the same, privately called "taking a *look*." They were a capital set in their attitudes, with their glasses, all peering up into the sky, *à la chasse* for the sun and moon. However, they were all very civil, and inoffensive, and unobjectionable; and I hope they are all as happy on shore as we are.

We had a beautiful day for landing—no surf at all. In England I have often bathed in a worse sea. It is very curious that the Madras surf should be so formidable: it generally looks nothing, not to compare to a Brighton rough sea; but in reality its force is irresistible. I sometimes see the great lumbering Masoolah boats as nearly as possible upset by waves which look so gentle and quiet that one longs to bathe in them. We landed in a great boat with twelve boatmen, all singing a queer kind of howl, and with very small matters of clothes on, but their black skins prevent them from looking so very uncomfortable as Europeans would in the same *minus* state.

The scene in the Madras Roads is the brightest and liveliest possible. The sea is completely studded with ships and boats of every size and shape, and the boats filled with crews even more quaint and picturesque than themselves. But none can compare to the catamarans, and the wonderful people that manage them. Fancy a raft of only three logs of wood, tied together at each end when they go out to sea, and untied and left to dry on the beach when they come in again. Each catamaran has one, two, or three men to manage it: they sit crouched upon their heels, throwing their paddles about very dexterously, but remarkably unlike rowing. In one of the early Indian voyagers' log-books there is an entry concerning a catamaran: "This morning, six A.M., saw distinctly two black devils playing at single-stick. We watched these infernal imps above an hour, when they were lost in the distance. Surely this doth portend some great tempest." It is very curious to watch these catamarans putting out to sea. They get through the fiercest surf, sometimes dancing at their ease on the top of the waves, sometimes hidden under the waters; sometimes the man completely washed off his catamaran, and man floating one way and catamaran another, till they seem to catch each other again by magic. They put me in mind of the witch of Fife's voyage in her cockle-shell:—

"And aye we mountit the sea-green hillis,
Till we brushed through the clouds of the hevin;
Then sousit downright, like the star-shot light
Frae the liftis blue casement driven.

But our taickil stood, and our bark was good,
And sae pang was our pearly prowe,
Whan we could not climb the brow of the waves,
We needlit them through below."

December 27th.—I think I shall like Madras very much, and I am greatly amused with all I see and hear. The heat now is not at all oppressive, this being the cool season. The houses are so airy and large, and the air so light, that one does not feel the heat so much as one would in Italy when the temperature is the same. At present the thermometer is at 78°, but it feels so much cooler, from the thorough draughts they keep up in every room, that I would not believe it to be more than 70°, till I looked with my own eyes. The rooms are as large as chapels, and made up of doors and windows, open day and night. I have seen so many curiosities already, that I do not know which to describe to you first—jugglers, tumblers, snake-charmers, native visitors, &c. &c.; for the last few days we have been in a constant bustle. Those snake-charmers are most wonderful. One day we had eight cobras and three other snakes all dancing round us at once, and the snake-men singing and playing to them on a kind of bagpipes. The venomous snakes they call *good* snakes: one, the Braminee cobra, they said was so good, his bite would kill a man in three hours; but of course all these had their fangs extracted. I was told that they had their teeth drawn once a-month, but I suppose in fact they have the venom extracted from their teeth. The men bring them in covered baskets. They set the baskets on the ground, and play their bagpipes for a while; then they blow at the snakes through the baskets; then play a little more: at last they take off the lid of the basket, and the snake rises up very grand, arching his neck like a swan, and with his hood spread, looking very handsome, but very wicked.

There is one great convenience in visiting at an Indian house, viz.—every visitor keeps his own establishment of servants, so as to give no trouble to those of the house. The servants provide for themselves in a most curious way. They seem to me to sleep

nowhere, and eat nothing, — that is to say, in our houses, or of our goods. They have mats on the steps, and live upon rice. But they do very little, and every one has his separate work. I have an ayah (or lady's maid), and a tailor (for the ayahs cannot work); and A—— has a boy: also two muddles—one to sweep my room, and another to bring water. There is one man to lay the cloth, another to bring in dinner, another to light the candles, and others to wait at table. Every horse has a man and a maid to himself—the maid cuts grass for him; and every dog has a boy. I inquired whether the cat had any servants, but I found that she was allowed to wait upon herself; and, as she seemed the only person in the establishment capable of so doing, I respected her accordingly. Besides all these acknowledged and ostensible attendants, each servant has a kind of muddle or double of his own, who does all the work that can be put off upon him without being found out by the master and mistress. Notwithstanding their numbers, they are dreadfully slow. I often tire myself with doing things for myself rather than wait for their dawdling; but Mrs. Staunton laughs at me, and calls me a "griffin," and says I must learn to have patience and save my strength. (N.B. *Griffin* means a freshman or freshwoman in India.) The real Indian ladies lie on a sofa, and, if they drop their handkerchief, they just lower their voices and say, "Boy!" in a very gentle tone, and then creeps in, perhaps, some old wizen, skinny brownie, looking like a superannuated thread-paper, who twiddles after them for a little while, and then creeps out again as softly as a black cat, and sits down cross-legged in the verandah till "Mistress please to call again."

We have had a great many visits from natives to welcome A—— back again, or, as they say, "to see the light of Master's countenance, and bless God for the honour!" One—a gentleman, in his black way—called at six in the morning: he left his carriage at the gate, and his slippers under a tree; and then, finding we were going out riding, he walked barefoot in the dust by the side of our horses till "our honours" were pleased to dismiss him. Another met us, got out of his carriage, kicked off his shoes, and stood bowing in the dirt while we passed; then drove on to the house, and waited humbly under the verandah for an hour and a half, till we were pleased to finish our ride. One

paid me a visit alone, and took the opportunity to give me a great deal of friendly advice concerning managing A——. He especially counselled me to persuade him *to tell a few lies.*" He said he had often advised "Master" to do so; but that he would not mind *him*, but "perhaps Mistress persuade Master. Master very good—very upright man; he always good: but Master say all same way that he think. Much better not! Mistress please tell Master. Anybody say wrong, Master's mind different: that quite right—Master keep his own mind; his mind always good: but let Master say all same what others say; that much better, and they give him fine appointment, and plenty much rupees!" I said that that was not English fashion, but my visitor assured me that there were "plenty many" Englishmen who told as many lies as the natives, and were all rich in consequence: so then I could only say it was very wrong, and not Master's fashion nor mine; to which he agreed, but thought it "plenty great pity!"

These natives are a cringing set, and behave to us English as if they were the dirt under our feet; and indeed we give them reason to suppose we consider them as such. Their servility is disagreeable, but the rudeness and contempt with which the English treat them are quite painful to witness. Civility to servants especially seems a complete characteristic of *griffinage.* One day I said to my ayah (a very elegant lady in white muslin) "Ayah, bring me a glass of toast-and-water, if you please." She crept to the door, and then came back again, looking extremely perplexed, and whined out, "What Mistress tell? I don't know." "I told you to bring me some toast-and-water." "Toast-water I know very well, but mistress tell *if you please*; I don't know *if you please.*" I believe the phrase had never before been addressed to her. Everything seems to be done by means of constantly finding fault: if one lets the people suppose they have given a moment's satisfaction, they begin to reason, "Master tell very good; try a little more than worse; perhaps Master like plenty as well." One day I gave some embroidery to be done by a Moorman recommended by my tailor: the Moorman did not bring his work home in time; I asked Mrs. Staunton what was to be done. "Oh," she said, "of course stop the tailor's pay." "But it is no fault of the poor tailor's." "Oh, never

mind that: he is the Moorman's particular friend, and he will go and beat him every day till he brings the work home."

They are like babies in their ways: fancy my great fat ayah, forty years old, amusing herself with puffing the wind in and out of my air-cushion till she has broken the screw! The jargon that the English speak to the natives is most absurd. I call it "John Company's English," which rather affronts Mrs. Staunton. It seems so silly and childish, that I really cannot yet bring myself to make use of it; but I fancy I must in time, for the King's English is another characteristic of *griffinage*, and the servants seem unable to understand the commonest direction till it is translated into gibberish.

* * * * * *

My letter is called for, as a ship sails this evening; so I must say Good-bye.

LETTER THE SIXTH.

* * * * *

January 11th, 1837.

BISHOP CORRIE called on us the other day, to my great delight, for I had so long revered his character, that it was a very great pleasure to me to see and make acquaintance with him. He is a most noble-looking old man, with a very fine countenance, and a gentle, benevolent manner—a pattern for a bishop in appearance as well as everything else. On Sunday morning we went to the cathedral, but the good bishop did not preach, and we had but an indifferent sermon, on Virtue and Vice. In the evening we went to a chapel in Black Town, some miles from the place where we live, and so crowded that we were obliged to be there three-quarters of an hour before the time, in order to secure seats; but we were well repaid for our labour and trouble. We heard a most delightful preacher: his sermon was clear, and striking. He is said to be doing an immense deal of good here. His chapel was originally intended for *half-castes*, but he is so popular that the Europeans will go there too. People complain, and perhaps justly, that those for whom the chapel was built are kept out in consequence; but I do not see why the English should not have a good sermon once on a Sunday, as well as the blackies.

We went yesterday to the examination of a native school of *Caste* boys—not Christians, but they learn to read the Bible for the sake of the education they receive in other respects. They looked very intelligent, and very picturesque in their turbans and jewels. They answered extremely well, in English, questions on Scripture, on geography, and history, and wrote English from dictation. However, they gave one or two queer, heathenish answers, such as: *Query.* "What is meant by God's *resting* from his work on the seventh day? Did God require rest?" *Answer.* "In the night time he did." This school was esta-

blished by some English gentlemen for the more respectable classes of natives. Most of the English schools admit Caste boys and Pariahs without any distinction, which is really almost like expecting young gentlemen and chimney-sweepers to learn together in England. The real Madras schools, which taught Dr. Bell his system, are native hedge-schools, held under a shed. The industry of the poor little scholars is wonderful: from six in the morning till eight at night (with the exception of a short time in the middle of the day to go to sleep and eat rice) they are hard at work, bawling their hearts out: our infant-school noise is nothing to theirs. It is very curious—such a lazy, inert race as the Hindoos are—what pains and trouble they will take for a little learning; and little enough they get (poor things!) with all their labour.

A *Moonshee* seems to be a component part of most English establishments, so I have set up one also. He comes three times a-week to teach me Tamul. He is a very solemn sort of person, with long mustachios, and numbers of beautiful shawls which he twists round his waist till they stand out half a yard in front of him, and come into the room before his face appears. When we hired him he made many salams, and said he preferred our friendship to any remuneration we could give; but he condescends to accept five pagodas a month besides. He comes when I choose, and goes away when I bid him. If I am not ready, he sits on his heels in the verandah for a couple of hours doing nothing, till I call him. If I am tired in the course of my lesson, I walk away, and bid him write a little; and there he sits, scribbling very slowly, and very intently, till I please to come back again. He is President of a Hindoo Literary Society, and at its first opening delivered a lecture in English, of which he is very proud. He brought it to me to-day to read. The whole was capital; and it concluded with a hope "that this respectable institution, so happily begun in smoke, might end in blaze!" This Tamul that he is to teach me is a fearfully ugly language—clattering, twittering, chirping, sputtering—like a whole poultry-yard let loose upon one, and not a singing-bird, not a melodious sound among them. I suspect I shall soon grow tired of it, but meanwhile it is a little amusement. I read stories to Moonshee, and then he writes down the roots of the words for me to learn

by heart. One day I was reading about a "hero who ate kicks;" but Moonshee looked a little coy, and said he would not write down "kicks," because that was a word that would be of no use to me. A Tamul-writer came to-day to copy some document on cadjan-leaf for Mr. Staunton. He held the leaf in one hand, and a sharp steel-pointed style for a pen in the other. He had the nail of his little finger as long as a bird's claw, which I thought was for untidiness, but I find it is for ornament. He wrote very fast, and seemed quite at his ease, though sitting on his heels, and writing on his hand in this inconvenient manner.

We have been to one or two large dinner-parties, rather grand, dull, and silent. The company are generally tired out with the heat and the office-work all day before they assemble at seven o'clock, and the houses are greatly infested by musquitos, which are in themselves enough to lower one's spirits and stop conversation. People talk a little in a very low voice to those next to them, but one scarcely ever hears any topic of general interest started except steam navigation. To be sure, "few changes can be rung on few bells;" but these good folks do ring on "the changes in the service," till I cannot help sometimes wishing all their appointments were permanent. At an Indian dinner all the guests bring their own servants to wait upon them, so there is a turbaned sultan-like creature behind every chair. A great fan is going over our heads the whole time, and every window and door open; so that, notwithstanding the number of people in the room, it is in reality cooler than an English dining-room. What would grandmamma say to the wastefulness of an Indian dinner? Everybody dines at luncheon, or, as it is here called, tiffin-time, so that there is next to nothing eaten, but about four times as much food put upon the table as would serve for an English party. Geese and turkeys and joints of mutton for side-dishes, and everything else in proportion. All the fruit in India is not worth one visit to your strawberry-beds. The ingenious French at Pondicherry have contrived to cultivate vines; but the English say nothing will grow, and they remain content to waste their substance and their stomach-aches on spongy shaddocks and sour oranges, unless they send to Pondicherry for grapes, which the French are so obliging as to sell at a rupee a bunch. After dinner the company all sit round in the

middle of the great gallery-like rooms, talk in whispers, and scratch their musquito-bites. Sometimes there is a little music, as languid as everything else. Concerning the company themselves, the ladies are all young and wizen, and the gentlemen are all old and wizen. Somebody says France is the paradise of married women, and England of girls: I am sure India is the paradise of middle-aged gentlemen. While they are young, they are thought nothing of—just supposed to be making or marring their fortunes, as the case may be; but at about forty, when they are "high in the service," rather yellow, and somewhat grey, they begin to be taken notice of, and called "young men." These respectable persons do all the flirtation too in a solemn sort of way, while the young ones sit by, looking on, and listening to the elderly gentlefolks discussing their livers instead of their hearts.

Every creature seems eaten up with laziness. Even my horse pretends he is too fine to switch off his own flies with his own long tail, but turns his head round to order the horse-keeper to wipe them off for him. Some old Anglo-Indians think themselves too grand to walk in their gardens without servants behind them; and one may really see them, skinny and straw-coloured, and withered like old stubble, creeping along their gravel walks, with a couple of beautiful barefooted peons, with handsome turbans, strutting behind them, and looking like bronze casts of the Apollo in attendance upon Frank's caricatures of our old dancing-master.

Few things amuse me more than the letters we daily receive from natives, underlings in office, who knew A—— before he went to England. One apologises for troubling *him* with "looking at the handwriting of such a remote individual," but begs leave humbly to congratulate him on the safe arrival in India of himself and "his respectable family," meaning me! Another hopes soon to have the honour of throwing *himself* "at your goodness's philanthropic feet." Is not this the true Fudge style?

"—— The place where our Louis Dixhuit
Set the first of his own dear legitimate feet."

* * * * *

LETTER THE SEVENTH.

* * * * * *

January 31st.

THE other day a very rich native, an old protégé of A——'s, came to say that he and his son wished to make a feast for me, if I would come to their house. I was extremely glad, for I was longing to get into one of their native houses; so last night we all went to him by appointment—Mr. and Mrs. Staunton, A——, and I. It was a most curious entertainment; but I was surprised to find that the Stauntons, who have been so long in the country, had never seen anything of the kind before. It is wonderful how little interested most of the English ladies seem by all the strange habits and ways of the natives; and it is not merely that they have grown used to it all, but that, by their own accounts, they never cared more about what goes on around them than they do now. I can only suppose they have forgotten their first impressions. But this makes me wish to try and see everything that I can while the bloom of my Orientalism is fresh upon me, and before this apathy and listlessness have laid hold on me, as no doubt they will.

I asked one lady what she had seen of the country and the natives since she had been in India. "Oh, nothing!" said she: "thank goodness, I know nothing at all about them, nor I don't wish to: really I think the less one sees and knows of them the better!"

Armogum and Sooboo, our two entertainers, met us at their garden-gate, with numbers of lanterns, and rows of natives, some of them friends and some servants, all the way up to the house. The whole house was lighted up like a show, with chandeliers, lamps, and lustres in every possible corner, and hung from the ceiling and festooned to the walls besides: it looked very bright and pretty. The house consisted of one very large verandah, in which stood the native company; that opened into a large draw-

ing-room, with a smaller room at each end, and sleeping-rooms beyond; and on the other side of the drawing-room another verandah leading into another garden. The house was furnished very much like a French lodging-house, only with more comfortable ottomans and sofas; but the general effect was very French: quantities of French nicknacks set out upon different tables, and the walls quite covered with looking-glasses.

We were led into the great drawing-room, and placed upon sofas, and servants stationed at our side to fan us: then Armagum and Sooboo brought us each a nosegay of roses, and poured rose-water over them and over our hands; and they gave me a queer kind of sprig made of rice and beads, like a twelfth-cake ornament: then they gave us each a garland of scented flowers, so powerful that even now, at the end of the next day, I cannot get rid of the perfume on my hands and arms. Then the entertainment began: they had procured the musicians, dancers, and cooks belonging to the Nabob, in order that I might see all the Mussulman amusements, as well as those of the Hindoos. First, then, came in an old man with a long white beard, to play and sing to the vina, an instrument like a large mandoline, very pretty and antique to look at, but not much to hear. His music was miserable, just a mixture of twang and whine, and quite monotonous, without even a pretence to a tune. When we were quite tired of him, he was dismissed, and the Nabob's dancing-girls came in: most graceful creatures, walking, or rather sailing about, like queens, with long muslin robes from their throats to their feet. They were covered with gold and jewels, earrings, nose-rings, bracelets, armlets, anklets, bands round their heads, sévignés, and rings on all their fingers and all their toes. Their dancing consisted of sailing about, waving their hands, turning slowly round and round, and bending from side to side: there were neither steps nor figure, as far as I could make out. The prettiest of their performances was their beautiful swan-like march. Then they sang, bawling like bad street-singers—a most fearful noise, and no tune. Then we had a concert of orchestra music, with different-looking instruments, but in tone like every modification of bagpipes—every variety of drone and squeak: you can form no idea of such sounds under the name of

music: the chimney-sweepers' clatter on May-day would be harmonious in comparison. Imagine a succession of unresolved discords, selected at random, and played on twenty or thirty loud instruments, all out of tune in themselves and with each other, and you will have a fair idea of Hindoo music and its effect on the nerves.

When my teeth had been set on edge till I could really bear it no longer, I was obliged to beg A—— to give the musicians a hint to stop. Then there came in a man to imitate the notes of various birds: this sounded promising, but unfortunately the Madras birds are screaming, and not singing, birds; and my ears were assailed by screech-owls, crows, parrots, peacocks, &c., so well imitated that I was again obliged to beg relief from such torture. Then we had a Hindoo dancing-girl, with the most magnificent jewellery I ever saw: her dancing was very much like that of the Mahometans, only a little more difficult. There was a good deal of running backwards and forwards upon her heels, and shaking her silver bangles or armlets, which jingled like bells: then glissading up to me, waving her pretty little hands, and making a number of graceful, unmeaning antics, with her eyes fixed on mine in a strange unnatural stare, like animal magnetism. I think those magnetic actings and starings must first have been imitated from some Indian dancing-girl, and in fact the effect is much the same; for I defy any one to have watched this girl's dull, unvarying dance long, without going to sleep. The natives I believe can sit quite contented for hours without any more enlivening amusement; but then they are always half asleep by nature, and like to be quite asleep by choice at any opportunity.

After her performance was ended we had a conjuror, some of whose tricks were quite marvellous. He had on a turban and cummerbund (or piece of muslin wrapped round him), but no jacket, so that one could not imagine a possibility of his concealing any of his apparatus about him; but, among other tricks, he took a small twig of a tree, ran his fingers down it to strip the leaves off—small leaves, like those of a sensitive-plant —and showered down among us, with the leaves, five or six great live scorpions; not little things like Italian scorpions, but formidable animals, almost as long as my hand: I did not ad-

mire their company, creeping about the room, so he crumpled them up in his hand, and they disappeared; then he waved his bare arms in the air, and threw a live cobra into the midst of us. Most of his other tricks were juggling with cups and balls, &c., like any English conjuror; but the scorpions and cobra were quite beyond my comprehension.

Our gentlemen were surprised at seeing the string which is always worn by Brahmins round this man's neck, and said that twenty years ago no Brahmin could possibly have so degraded himself as to show off before us as a common juggler. After he was dismissed we had another gold and silver girl, to dance upon sharp swords, to music as sharp; then a fire-eater; and last of all a great supper laid out in the back verandah. The first course consisted of all the nabob's favourite dishes of meat, and curries and pillaws set out in China plates; the second course, all Hindoo cookery, set out in cups and saucers. A—— whispered to me that I must eat as much as I could, to please poor old Armagum; so I did my best, till I was almost choked with cayenne-pepper. The Moorman pillaws were very good; but among the Hindoo messes I at last came to something so queer, slimy, and oily, that I was obliged to stop.

After supper Armagum made me a speech, to inform me that he was aware that the Hindoos did not know how to treat ladies: that he had therefore been that morning to consult an English friend of his, Mr. Tracey, concerning the proper mode of showing me the respect that was my due; and that Mr. Tracey had informed him that English ladies were accustomed to exactly the same respect as if they were gentlemen, and that he had better behave to me accordingly. He begged I would consider that, if there had been any deficiency, it was owing to ignorance, and not to want of affection; for that he looked upon me as his mother! Then he perfumed us all with attar of roses, and we came away after thanking him very cordially for his hospitality and all the amusement he had given us. I was very curious to see the ladies of the family, but they could not appear before English gentlemen. I peeped about in hopes of catching a glimpse of them, and I did descry some black eyes and white dresses through one of the half-open doors, but I could not see them distinctly.

* * * * * *

LETTER THE EIGHTH.

Madras, February 9th.

WE have just received all your letters, which were more welcome than ever letters were before. In England, with your daily post, you little know the eagerness with which we poor Indians look out for our monthly despatch, nor the delight with which we receive it. For some days before the mail is expected all Madras is in a fever, speculating, calculating, hoping, almost praying, that it may arrive a few days, or even a few hours, before the usual time; and when it is known to be "in," the news travels like wildfire in all directions; peons are despatched from every compound to wait at the post-office and bring the letters the instant they are given out, in order to gain an hour upon the general postmen; all other interests and occupations are forgotten; and many people will receive no visits, if there should chance to be any unfortunate beings so letterless as to be able to pay them.

* * * * * *

You ask what kind of scenery we have round Madras. Flat plains of sandy ground, covered with a little harsh dry grass; half-cultivated gardens with high hedges; and large dilapidated-looking houses. Here and there we see very curious and picturesque native buildings, chiefly pagodas; but in general there is very little beauty either of architecture or scenery. Indian colouring is not for a moment to be compared with Italian for lightness, softness, or brilliancy. The sunsets are sometimes exceedingly beautiful, but in general I think the colouring is rather heavy and glaring. However, Madras is not considered a good specimen; people tell me that when I go up the country I shall be "surprised and delighted." The number of open fields and gardens must be healthy, but there is never any fresh feeling in the air: it is all as dead and close as the air of a street. The flowers have no perfume, except the pagoda-flowers,

and those are sickly, like withered jessamine; and at every turn in the road one meets with the smell of native cookery, fried cocoa-nut oil, and nasty messes of the same kind.

Moonshee has just sent me a plate of cakes, with a letter to say that he feels convinced I will not disdain the offer on account of its futility, but accept it as a token of the filial affection with which he regards my benignity; hoping I will foster him with the milk of my kindness, and regard him as my own son! This is really word for word his composition.

This morning I had a visit from Armagum and Sooboo to ask leave to borrow Mrs. C——'s beautiful Landscape Annual, which they had peeped into and admired as it lay on the drawing-room table. They promised to "make cover up, and plenty take care, if Mistress would lend," which of course Mistress was very happy to do. Armagum said that all the books about England were so long and big that it frightened anybody to look at them, and yet he wanted very much to know something about what Europe was like; and that this "little book, with very good yellow cover, plenty pictures, and very little read," was exactly what he wanted. So pray tell Mrs. C—— that it is probably at this moment making grand show, with a party of natives solemnly looking over and wondering at it. They wonder at everything European, particularly children's toys. They admire our dolls so much, that they are almost ready to make Swamies* of them. At home we talk of ignorance and heathenism, but we have no idea of what the ignorance of heathenism really is. They think it a most marvellous piece of learning for a boy to be able to find Europe on a map of the world, and they are almost as ignorant of the history of their own country as of ours. They think they already know everything that is at all deep or dry and requires study.

A Mr. N—— has established a sort of conversazione once a-week at his own house, for the better class of natives to meet and discuss subjects of general interest and information, in hopes of leading them to think of something a little beyond their monthly salaries and diamond earrings. One of our visitors had been there last night, so we asked him how he liked it, and what was the subject of conversation. It was some branch of political

* Inferior gods.

economy connected with Indian government and taxation; but as to how he liked it, he said, "What use hear all that? I know everything master make talk. Now and then I look, just see other people there too, and then I make slumber!" And that is just the way with them in everything but money-getting; they seem awake and alive to nothing else. This man is a sort of half-heathen, half-deist, like most of those who have associated much with Europeans; but he declares that his religion is just the same as ours, only that there are four grades of religion, suited to different orders of minds—idolatry being the lowest, and proper for the common people, but more educated persons see what the idols are intended to represent, and they progress through all the different grades till they arrive at the highest, when they understand everything, and find all religions alike, and all true, only different ways of representing the same thing. A—— says he has argued with him till he is tired, but that it is of no use: he always answers, "Yes, sar; that all same what I say."

February 12th.—Everybody in Madras has been in real sorrow of late for the death of Bishop Corrie. They say he was the most useful person in all India, and the most beloved. He was thought to have more judgment, experience, and knowledge of the native character, than any one else. Everybody of every class looked up to his wisdom and firmness: yet he was so gentle, benevolent, and courteous, that it was impossible to know him without becoming really attached to him. I used always to think I had never seen such a pattern of "the meekness of wisdom." Like most good and active men here, he fell a victim to over-exertion of mind and body. He went on too long at the highest possible stretch, and was suddenly paralysed—carried home insensible from a public meeting at which he was presiding on Tuesday, and was buried on the Sunday following.

The weather is now fast changing and growing very oppressive: the thermometer stands at 87°. The other day we had a storm, which lowered it to 82°, and a native wrote us word that he was very sorry he could not keep an appointment with us, because the weather was so cold he was afraid to venture out!

As you say you like to hear all about our domestic economy,

servants, &c., I must tell you of a thievery which took place last week. We lost a pair of sheets, and the loss was laid to the horse-keeper, who was fined two rupees, it being the custom to punish the servants for every misdemeanor just as if they were children. But the purloiner of our sheets was in reality A——'s dress-boy, who had stolen them to make his own jackets. To avoid the expense of paying for making, he took them to a Coolie tailor, which you may understand to mean a cobbling tailor, who sometimes cobbles for us, and is therefore obliged to do the servants' needle-work for nothing, for fear of having lies told of him to "Master," and so losing Master's favour. Coolie tailor lives near *my* tailor, who is a grandee in comparison; and Coolie, being very glad to have some good European materials to boast of, and extremely proud of his job, showed them off to my tailor. Grandee tailor was more used to the ways of Europeans, and knew that they did not give their good sheets for the servants to make jackets of; so he guessed they had been stolen, and told my ayah, and she told me, not out of any pretence of conscience or care of my goods, but because, as she said, Mrs. Staunton had told her, on hiring her, that she was to take care of my things, and that, if anything was lost, I would "take away her bread," meaning, dismiss her; and then she must "eat up her own money." It was hopeless for any of us to attempt to find out the truth, because the chances were even as to the dress-boy's being a thief, or the ayah and tailor liars; so the only way was to give orders that two of the other servants should search into the matter: one alone would have just told a lie on whichever side suited him, but two were supposed to be a check on each other. Accordingly, there was a regular form of trial held under a mango-tree in the compound:* I watched them from the window, and a capital group they made. The butler, as judge, waving his arms in the air like the leaves of a cocoa-nut tree; the criminal standing in the midst, looking more mean and crestfallen than any European could manage to look under any possible circumstances; the ayah, smoothing down her oily hair with her fingers as she told her story; and the rest of the servants standing round to make a kind of jury, assisted by all their retainers of hags and imps in the shape of old wo-

* Field, or garden, round the house.

men and naked black children. A verdict of Guilty was brought in, and the thief, Chelapa by name, was of course dismissed from our service. Then followed a variety of queer scenes. Chelapa would not go, but remained on his knees in A——'s dressing-room, his turban in his hand, stroking his shaven poll, and kissing the floor, in hopes of being forgiven. When he was sent "out of that," the butler came back with him to bespeak compassion: "Sar! Master boy, cry Sar!" Chelapa took the hint and began to cry accordingly, till, finding nothing would do, he consoled himself by abusing the ayah, telling her he would "walk round the house" every day till he could find out some "rogue business" of her doing: to which, she says, she "made compliments;" but she was in reality so frightened at the threat, that she cried for three days. Then the tailor began to cry, for fear some harm should happen to him in the scuffle, and looked up in my face so piteously every time I went up and down stairs that I could not pass him without laughing. A—— asked the horse-keeper why he had submitted to a false accusation, and to be fined for stealing, when he knew he had done no such thing; he answered, "What for make trouble? Master tell horse-keeper thief; what use horse-keeper tell? Horse-keeper make trouble, Master tell 'Go away!'" The probability is, that he was paid by the thief to take the blame. See what a set they are!

* * * * *

LETTER THE NINTH.

* * * * *

August 16th.

I HAVE been trying to entomologize, as there are abundance of curious insects. Mr. Spence himself told me, before I left home, that the insects of India were very little known; and that I could not fail to find many new specimens, especially among the smaller Coleoptera. It is impossible to go "*à la chasse*" oneself, so I employed the beggar-boys, who at first liked the amusement and brought me a great many, but they gradually grew tired of it, and are now too lazy to find me any more at all. I raised my price, but all in vain. These naked imps prefer sitting on the grass all day with nothing to do, crumpled up and looking like tadpoles, and will not give themselves the trouble even to put out their paws to take an insect if he crosses their path. They are indeed a lazy race. The servants lie on their mats, strewing the floor like cats and dogs, and begin to puff and whine whenever one gives them any employment. The truest account of their occupations was given me in her blundering English by my muddle. I said, "Ellen, what are you doing? why don't you come when I call you?" "No, ma'am." "What are you doing, I say?" "Ma'am, I never do;" meaning, "I am doing nothing." However, sometimes they contrive to do mischief. I found my watch stopped: I said, "Ayah, how did you break my watch? did you knock it?"—"Ma'am, a little I knock, not too much!"

We are now living at St. Thomé, a sort of suburb of Madras, close by the sea-side, and comparatively cool. We are really now not oppressed by heat; I could not have supposed such a short distance could have made so much difference: the thermometer is at 84°, which is quite bearable after one has tried 92°. But St. Thomé is not thought healthy the whole year through, because the "long-shore winds," as they are called, are more felt here

than inland. This long-shore wind is very disagreeable—a sort of sham sea-breeze blowing from the south; whereas the real sea-breeze blows from the east: it is a regular cheat upon the new-comers, feeling damp and fresh as if it were going to cool one, but in reality keeping up a constant cold perspiration, which is more weakening and relaxing than even the heat; and yet one cannot shut the wind out, for the moment one is out of its influence the heavy dead heat is insupportable. It only blows at particular times of the year, and is now going off.

This St. Thomé is said to be a thievish place: we have two Sepoys to guard the house at night. When we first came we were awakened at intervals by a most horrible yelling and screaming: we thought it must be drunken men, and scolded the Sepoys for not keeping them off, but we found it was the Sepoys themselves, yelling for their own security, to frighten the hobgoblins. Yesterday I saw a slim young black creeping up my back-stairs outside the house, peering about in a sneaking, suspicious sort of a way; and as soon as he saw me he ran off and hid himself. I thought he might be a thief, so I turned out all the servants to catch him, but he proved to be nothing but the dog-boy looking for shoes to clean. I asked him why he ran away in that foolish fright, if he was only employed in his proper business; and I was told that he could not help it, for he had never seen the Mistress so close before, and she frightened him.

Mr. and Mrs. Staunton are gone to-day to the wedding of their young friend Miss L——. She has married a lieutenant in the army with nothing but his pay, and I am afraid they will be very poor. It seems to me that in this country a small income must be wretched indeed, for what would be luxuries in England, such as large airy houses, carriages, plenty of servants, &c. &c., are here necessaries indispensable to the preservation of health, independently of comfort. The real luxury here, and for which one would gladly pay any price, would be the power of doing without such matters.

A—— is busily employed in translating into Tamul a book which we hope may be useful. The Moonshee transcribes it for him, and is a complete baby about it. I think he must spend all his time in copying it over and over. One day he brings "to show Mistress a fair copy," and the next day "if

Mistress please to look, a more fairer copy," and he will stand for a quarter of an hour at a time in the middle of the room, making salaam, and twirling his mustachios, and stroking his manuscript. A—— works with the Moonshee while I scold the tailor. I scold him from the "best of motives," and here are my reasons: he is hired by the month, and paid a great deal more than he is worth,—dawdle that he is!—but it is the only way of getting needlework done at all here. He often asks for a day's leave of absence, and often takes it without asking. I used to be compassionate to him at first, believing his excuses; but when I repeated them to Mrs. Staunton, she said they were all lies. One day he told me that his mother was sick, and that she would soon be dead, and he would "put her out of the way;" but Mrs. Staunton said that this mother had already died three times to her certain knowledge, and that I must forbid her ever being sick again without my permission; so I gave my orders accordingly, and she has been quite well ever since. Sometimes he sits on his mat crying, and saying he is "plenty sick" himself, so then I send him away for half a day, with orders to come back quite well next morning, or I shall get another tailor; and this always cures him. One day he asked me for five days' leave "to paint his face:" this *did* puzzle me, but I found it was on account of the Mohurrum, a kind of Mussulman carnival, when they all dress up, and paint not only their own faces, but those of all their animals. The cows' horns were all painted green and red, and sometimes one horn green and one red; and I met an elephant with his face painted in crimson and gold half way down his trunk, and his little cunning eyes peering through his finery, such an object that his own mother could not have known him; but he evidently thought himself dressed in a wonderfully becoming costume, and was floundering along, shaking his ears and waving his trunk, and never dreaming what a figure they had made of him.

June 1*st.*—To-day we have the first specimen I have felt of real Indian heat; hitherto it has been an unusually cool season, but to-day there is a regular land-wind, and plenty of it. I can only compare it to a blast from a furnace, withering one as it passes by. I have a tatt, or thick mat, at my window, which excludes the sun, and men sit outside pouring water on it all day,

so that the wind, which is extremely violent, blows always cooled through the water. This keeps the temperature of the room down at 90°, but it is dreadfully feverish, and far more distressing than a higher degree of the thermometer with the sea-breeze.

Just close under the tatt it is more tolerable, but the old Indians have a notion that it is unwholesome to sit in the damp: so it may be for them, but nothing will make me believe that I, just fresh from Europe, can catch cold with the thermometer at 90°: so I creep as close to the tatt as possible, and sit with my hands in a basin of water besides. This is a heat quite different from anything you ever felt in Europe, making one quite giddy; but they say it is only as bad as this for about ten days, after which the sea-breeze rises regularly at eleven or twelve o'clock, and restores one to life again. Now, the leaves of the trees are all curled up, and the grass crackles under our feet like snow, the sea is a dead yellow colour, and the air and light a sort of buff, as if the elements had the jaundice; and we are all *so* cross! creeping about and whining, and then lying down and growling —I hope it will not last long.

June 6th.—Weather better: the sea-breeze comes in the middle of the day, and one can breathe without crying; but the nights are hotter than the days. One contrives to sleep as well as one can, but Indian sleep is very unlike English — poor restless work! However, the musquitoes are not so bad here as in Italy: witness my sleeping without a musquito-net, rather than bear the additional heat of the gauze.

* * * * *

LETTER THE TENTH.

Madras, July 10th.

At last I am able to resume my journal to you, and I hope to continue it regularly. A—— wrote to you constantly and circumstantially during my confinement, but till now I have not been able to sit up and write myself. How I long to show baby to you! She is a very fine creature, and as strong and healthy as if she had been born in Old England. She will be christened next week, and then, as soon as we are strong enough to travel, we are to set out on a long journey. A—— has obtained the appointment of Zillah (or District) Judge of Rajahmundry, which makes us all very happy. He has never been in that part of the country before, and we are very busy, making all possible inquiries and preparations. Rajahmundry is in the Northern Circars (or Districts), and every one who has been there tells us that it is a pretty place, and has the grand recommendation of two months of really cool weather. They say the thermometer falls to 58°, and we are advised to take warm clothing with us. It is also a cheap place. There is very little European society, but that is a much less privation here than at home; for in this climate it is almost more trouble than pleasure to keep up the necessary civilities, and there will be plenty of amusement in seeing the really Indian part of India, which Rajahmundry will be.

We must take with us stores of everything that we are likely to want for six months,—furniture, clothes, and even great part of our food—for nothing is to be procured there, except meat, bread, and vegetables; and even our vegetables we must grow ourselves, and take the seeds with us from Madras. Anything we forget we must wait for till we can send to Madras. We have not yet decided whether to go by land or by sea, but I am afraid it will be wisest to go by sea, though I should much like

to see the country; but a long land-journey at this time of the year would be very fatiguing, and perhaps dangerous, on account of the cholera, which is now very prevalent. At Rajahmundry they speak Gentoo, or Teloogoo, which is a much prettier language than Tamul. There is no Chaplain, nor even a Missionary, I am sorry to say; but that is the case at eight stations out of ten, and one cannot choose one's station.

RAJAHMUNDRY, *August 6th.*—I was prevented from finishing this letter at Madras, by take-leave visits, &c., so that I had not a moment to myself; but it was just as well, for now I can tell you of our safe arrival here. We embarked on Saturday night, July 29th, ourselves, baby, and servants, with almost a shipload of goods, on board a small Liverpool vessel which happened to be in the roads, on its way to Calcutta. We had a beautiful evening, and no surf. We found the Captain in a fume at our being rather later than he expected; but it did not really signify, for, after all his fretting, he could not get his anchor up, owing to his having bad tackle, so there we were detained at anchor till one o'clock on Sunday afternoon. It was a pretty specimen of sea comfort;—ship rolling, captain growling; sailors singing, or rather bawling, some chorus about being "Off in a hurry; fare ye well, for she must go!" while they were dragging up the anchor; tackle breaking, and chain cable all flying to the bottom of the sea, as soon as ever the song was done; things in our cabin not "cleated down," but all "fetching way" with every roll of the ship, shuffling about, and taking their pleasure, like the dancing furniture in Washington Irving's dream; ayahs squatted on the floor, half-sick; baby squalling; A—— turning round and round in the little cabin, like a tiger in his den, dancing her to keep her quiet, but quiet she would not be; I, ready to cry with sickness and despair, crouched up in a corner unable to move,—and all for nothing, during eighteen hours!

At last we were off. We had a pretty good voyage on the whole, but one violent storm on Sunday night; the thunder ringing like a gong, and the air all around us white with lightning. In the midst of it all, some Italian Capuchins who were on board amused themselves with singing to their guitar. While the sea and wind together were roaring their loudest, twang, twang went that wretched guitar! The mixture was so absurd

that I could not help laughing, in the midst of all my sickness and fright.

On Tuesday morning our stupid Captain passed by Coringa, which was the port for which *we* were bound, and, when he took his observation at twelve o'clock, found himself half way to Vizagapatam. It was extremely inconvenient. All our letters of introduction were for the Coringa people, and the land-journey from Vizagapatam to Rajahmundry three times as long as from Coringa. The other passengers were very good-natured and obliging, said the delay was of no consequence to them, and begged us to go back to Coringa, if we liked. Accordingly, we did have the ship put about, but there was a strong wind right in our teeth; we were likely to be five or six days putting back; and the pitching and tossing such, that every minute of it settled our minds as it unsettled our stomachs: so we determined to go on to Vizagapatam, where we arrived on Tuesday night.

Before we landed, a catamaran brought us off a note from Mr. R., the Assistant Judge of the station, inviting us to his house. He has a little bungalow on the top of a rock, surrounded by bushes among which the hyænas walk about at their pleasure; but they never attack human beings, and the place is delightfully cool. Mr. R. received us most hospitably, supplied us with everything we wanted for our journey, and treated us just as if we had been old and intimate friends, though we had never seen nor heard of each other before. We spent Wednesday with him, and began our journey on Wednesday night, regular Indian fashion, in palanquins—A——, baby, I, and the ayahs; leaving the other servants to follow at leisure, with the luggage, in carts. We had fifty-two men to carry us, our provisions, clothes, plates, knives and forks, &c., for all the accommodations prepared for travellers are public bungalows, containing one table and six chairs,—and sometimes not those, only bare walls for shelter. An old Sepoy lives at each bungalow, to fetch water, and cook curry and rice; so one can get on comfortably enough.

It is all pleasant to me: baby has borne the journey quite well, and I enjoyed it very much. We travelled sometimes all night, sometimes part of the night, according to my strength, and rested at the bungalows during the day, and arrived here on Saturday night. We passed through a great deal of pretty country, and

some notorious tiger-jungles; but we saw no tigers—they are always afraid of the lights and noise of travellers. (N.B. A jungle is a tract of uncultivated ground, covered with thick brushwood, and trees here and there, and inhabited by tigers, hyænas, leopards—or cheetahs as they are called—monkeys, wild hogs, snakes, and quantities of beautiful birds.) Rajahmundry itself is a most lovely spot, on the banks of a magnificent river, the Godavery, with fine hills in the distance.

We have a good house, a capital garden, and are most uncommonly great grandees. I am very much amused with all the natives who come to pay their respects to the "Judge Doory." (Doory means gentleman.) My favourite, hitherto, is the Moofti, or principal Mahometan law expounder. He is one of the handsomest and most elegant creatures I ever saw,—somewhat dirty perhaps, — with beautiful Cashmere shawls worn threadbare, and in his shabby magnificence looking like a beggarly king. Then there is the Pundit, or principal Hindoo law expounder — a Bramin, very much of a mountebank, and something of a cheat, I should guess, by his face and manner. There are plenty of underlings, but these are the two principal men. They always come accompanied by their Vakeels, a kind of secretaries, or interpreters, or flappers — their muddles, in short: everybody here has a muddle, high or low. The Vakeels stand behind their masters during all the visit, and discuss with them all that A —— says. Sometimes they tell him some barefaced lie, and, when they find he does not believe it, they turn to me grinning, and say, "Ma'am, the Doory plenty cunning gentlyman."

The cholera is raging here,—and no wonder! a hundred thousand people assembled twenty days ago, for a grand native festival which only takes place once in twelve years. Many of them are too poor to afford to buy proper food, and most of them are dirty; and the accumulation of dirt and filth, with all the wretchedness and starvation to work upon, has bred a pestilence. When I arrived in the town I was fast asleep in my palanquin, and was literally awakened by the horrible stench. A——'s predecessor was entirely occupied in making a road through the jungle to drive his tandem on, and never thought of taking any measures to lessen the sickness, which has gained ground fear-

fully. A—— has set the prisoners at work immediately to clean the streets, and the heavy rains are to be expected soon, which always clear away diseases. There is little fear of cholera among Europeans, except in travelling. It is caused among the poor natives by bad feeding, dirt, and exposure to the climate. We always keep the cholera medicines in the house, in case any of the servants should be attacked; but that is very unlikely, as they are well fed and sheltered. The poor natives go on beating their tom-toms, or drums, all night, in hopes of driving it away; and the want of rest weakens them, and makes them still more liable to catch it.

August 11th.—We get on very comfortably, and are beginning to feel a little settled, though still rather in confusion. A—— is excessively busy with his Court work; having to get through long arrears of his predecessors. Our furniture is not yet arrived, so we are dependent upon a table and six chairs lent to us for the present: however, a clear house at first arrival was rather a convenience with regard to cleaning the rooms, which I have been very busy about, as A—— is in clearing out all the old "cases" accumulated in his Cutcherry. (N.B. Cutcherry means office.)

I fancy our predecessor was content with the same accommodation as the spiders, and thought sweeping unnecessary, so he kept no sweeper-woman, and, as may be supposed, the dirt crunched under our feet as we walked. I have had all the palanquin-boys, who are the best housemaids here, hard at work, taking away the old mats, hunting for scorpions and centipedes, dislodging the dirt-pies, disturbing the spiders, and clearing out every corner,—and now we are growing quite decent. We are planting vegetables, clipping hedges, and arranging all things to our own taste; and I think we shall soon be so comfortable, that when a better appointment offers, we shall not like to move.

Some of our arrangements are queer wild work. We have a hunting Peon, or "shoot-man," as he is called, who goes into the jungle every day to catch us half our dinner according to his taste or his luck. He brings hares, wild ducks, pigeons, &c., and yesterday he brought a magnificent peacock. It went to my heart to have such a beautiful creature cooked; but there was no help for it, and he was dead when he arrived. There are

pretty spotted deer and antelopes wild about the country, and I am going to have some caught to keep in the compound: they soon grow quite tame, and come and eat out of one's hand.

"John Company" allows us nine Peons to look grand with. Their business is to stand about, go on messages, walk after us (which, by the bye, we, cannot endure), do odd jobs, and "help Bill" in various ways. The other day I sent the baby and nurse out for a walk in our garden, not supposing that she required any escort, but a great Peon immediately stepped forward to march after her. She crowed at his dagger and red belt, and much approved of his attendance. A—— has given me two of the Peons for my particular service: I have nothing on earth for them to do, so I mean to set them collecting the pebbles found in the river here, which are very beautiful onyxes and agates. When they have got over their surprise, and are a little broken in to the "Dooresany's" (lady's) ways, I mean to set them catching insects; but I must wait a little first, for fear they should think me mad.

We have had a travelling gentleman staying with us for the last two days: we never saw him before, but he asked for shelter on his arrival, so, India-fashion, we took him in to do the best we could for him. I am obliged to make him carry a chair about with him like a snail-shell—take it into his room at night, and bring it out again to breakfast the next morning. He is a good-humoured, simple sort of person, but most oddly fearful. He took such alarm at hearing the cholera was in one village at which he slept on his journey, that he lost his appetite, ate nothing for twenty-four hours, and came to us really ill with starvation and fright. Then he was exceedingly afraid of robbers on the road, and had a great mind to take a guard of Peons on with him to Vizagapatam, only we laughed him out of it. There was some excuse for his fears, because he was just come from a very wild part of the country, but here we are as quiet and safe as at home. *Home* always means England; nobody calls India home—not even those who have been here thirty years or more, and are never likely to return to Europe; even they still always speak of England as home.

* * * * *

LETTER THE ELEVENTH.

* * * * *

Rajahmundry, August 14th.

OUR goods arrived last week. They had all been wetted through in the journey, and very much spoiled, but, by dint of keeping the sun and the palanquin-boys at work upon them, they are coming round again.

Captain Price, the commanding officer here, has just called. He seems very civil, nothing else particularly. He has a wife, whom I have not seen yet, as they were away till yesterday. The commanding officers are generally changed every three months. There is a Scotch Dr. Stewart, and a Mr. Macdonald, the sub-collector, but he is not here now. There will also be in time a Registrar, or, as they spell it here, "Register," but none is appointed yet. These and ourselves are all the residents; but there are continually travellers passing through, as this place is on the high road from the north to the south of Madras. I fancy the civilians all expect to come to us on their journey; and the militaries go to Captain Price: and whichever of us receives the visitor must make a dinner-party.

Last night I was awakened by a great uproar: I found it was on account of a snake who had crept into the house and hidden himself under a box. The maty had found him out, and the servants were all hunting and fighting him with sticks. He was caught and killed. A—— thought he was not of a venomous kind, but they are not pleasant visitors. I often hear the hyænas at night howling about the country. They are horrid spiteful-looking creatures, but so cowardly that they never attack any but weak animals. They do mischief in the poultry-yard, and sometimes carry off a small dog, and, if very hungry, now and then a young donkey; but one is no more afraid of them than of foxes in England.

Did you ever hear of the Thugs? They are a tribe of Hin-

doos whose business and trade is murder. They are brought up to it from childhood, choose their victim by omen, consider themselves and their vocation under the especial patronage and direction of one of their goddesses, Kalee, and set about their murdering work in the most cool and business-like manner. You will find a long account of them, and quite true, in Wolff's last volume of his Journal. There is a great sensation about them just now, and we are hunting them out everywhere. One has been brought to A—— for trial to-day, and I am very curious to hear about him.

I left off writing just now for my "tiffin," and could not imagine what they were bringing me to eat. Some *bran*, which I had been boiling to season a new tin kettle, and which the maty supposed to be some particular Europe cookie I was making for myself; and, thinking I was provided for, he has eaten up all my meat!

August 15*th*.—The Thug turned out to be an accuser instead of a criminal. A Peon had caught him, and he pretended that the Peon had offered to release him on his paying a certain sum, and that he had paid it, but the Peon still kept him prisoner. On investigation it turned out to be all a lie from beginning to end; so the Peon is released and the Thug sent to prison.

I was hard at work to-day unpacking books, sitting on the ground all over dust, sorting and putting them on the shelves, when Mrs. Price called to pay her first devoirs with all her best clothes on, worked muslin and yellow gloves. I thought the only way to prevent her being ashamed of me was to make her as dirty and dusty as myself; therefore, under pretence that it would be so nice for her to have some new books to read, I made her sit down by me and look them over too, and we got on very well. She is very young, pretty, and unaffected, and I like the thoughts of having her for a neighbour. It is pleasant to have some Englishwoman within reach as a companion.

August 29*th*.—Your packet, sent by private opportunity, has just arrived, to my great delight. I had received, a fortnight ago, letters from home of a later date, but private-hand letters are always slow. People never seem to be able to lay their private hands upon them till after they have finished all their unpacking.

We like our station better and better; it is far pleasanter than Madras, which was like England in a perspiration: here we have fresh, sweet country air, and no troublesome company, yet always enough to prevent us from feeling lonely.

I thoroughly enjoy the quiet, and I have plenty to do, more than I can ever get through in the day, so that I am never dull. In fact, one has less time at one's command here than at home, although the very early rising seems to give so many hours. But we are obliged to go out in the early morning; it is indispensable to lie down for some time in the middle of the day; we go out again in the cool of the evening, and come home again too tired to employ ourselves much at night. One's time seems to be spent in tiring and resting oneself.

I have caught a number of most beautiful butterflies: Coleoptera are more scarce, as I cannot grub for them myself, for fear of centipedes. This morning, I took a fancy for gardening myself, and while I was removing some dry leaves a large centipede showed his horrid pincers within an inch of my hand. He did not hurt me, but he has cured me of gardening. I have a number of schemes in hand; one is to make butter: the natives make it with rennet, shaking it in a bottle, and it is rather a nasty mess; but after a week's hard work and much scolding, the old carpenter has produced a churn: a fine, heavy, awkward concern it is, but the natives admire it greatly, and stand looking at it and calling it "Missis Dub" (meaning Mistress's tub). However, the butter is still waiting for pans to set the milk in, and they had to be made on purpose from description, and have not yet appeared. When I inquired for them this morning, I was told "Potman done fetch mud, chatties done make, but mud not done dry yet."

The other day I wanted some book-shelves made, and I sent for the carpenter. They told me they thought I should be wanting wood, so he was gone *fishing*, which seemed rather, as Johnny M. would say, a "*non sequitur*;" but it was quite true, for they really do fish for all the wood they use. It is washed down by the river; and when any is wanted, they just swim out, and catch the first piece that suits them.

There is an old Englishman living here as barrack-sergeant,—a sinecure for long service. He has been in the place these ten

years, and is a very respectable old man. He has a half-caste, dropsical wife, and a sickly nigger-looking child, but seems quiet and contented. A—— lends him books and the newspaper, and lets him come every Monday to change his books, and chat a little, which he likes best of all. He sits and proses for about half an hour, and is very happy at having a little intercourse with Europeans again. He takes particular interest in the young Queen, thinking she has a troublesome life before her. Yesterday he said to me, "Only think, ma'am, of such a young person for to be Queen of the realm! And in these times too, when the oldest hand could hardly keep them in order. She 'll have a tough job of it, poor young lady! I pity her from my heart, indeed I do! This paper says Lord Durham is to be called to her Majesty's counsels. I hope his Lordship is a fatherly kind of gentleman, ma'am, who will help her Majesty in some of her difficulties."

A—— is very kind in hunting out poor travellers who happen to be passing. The rich ones, who want for nothing, come to us as a matter of course, but the poor ones would pitch their tents under a tree during the hot hours, and go away again unnoticed, if he did not go and find them out. The other day he discovered seven English soldiers travelling to join their regiment: they were not in want of absolute necessaries, but, on his trying to find out what he could do for them, they told him at last, confidentially, that the greatest treat he could possibly give them would be a little tea and sugar to make themselves "a cup of English tea," which was a thing "they had not tasted they did not know when:" of course we sent them plenty, and books and tracts for the tea to wash down. They had a Bible among them, but they said "they set such store by it, they seldom let it see the light;" so we gave them another for use. A—— is very anxious to set up an English school for the natives, if he can persuade Sergeant Keeling to be schoolmaster; but the Sergeant thinks himself "not scholar enough." *We* think he is, and he speaks Teloogoo very well.

To-day a great Zemindar, or Rajah, came to pay us a visit: he is a proprietor of large estates in this district, and pays a rent to the Government of ten thousand a year,—quite a grandee; but he has some lawsuit going on at this court, so he said he was come to ask A—— to "protect a poor little man." He stayed an

immense time, and talked a great deal of nonsense, as they all do. It is very striking to see how completely want of education has blasted all their powers of intellect. They talk for hours and hours, without ever by any chance bringing out an original idea or a generous sentiment. Their conversation is never anything but wearisome twaddle. I suppose extremes meet. Do you remember Mr. J. once telling us that some celebrated person was "too well informed" — that he had "lost his originality"? These people, from being too ill informed, have never found theirs.

September 16th.—A day or two ago the Maty bolted into the breakfast-room, exclaiming, "Sar! one snake, sar! One big snake in godown! He very good snake, sar!" They call the venomous snakes "good" by way of propitiating them: they consider them as a species of evil-disposed gods, and pay them some kind of worship, though they kill them too whenever they can. This brute was a large deadly cobra capello: it had hidden itself behind some bottles in a recess under the steps where the water is cooled. A—— went directly to load his gun, and I peeped out, but could not go near enough to see the creature on account of the sun, and I *calculate* I should not have gone any nearer if it had been ever so shady. There stood all the palanquin-boys with bamboos in their hands, ready to beat it if it came out, and all the Peons peeping over their shoulders, array enough to attack a tiger. A—— forbade their killing it in that way, on account of the danger of their getting bitten if they missed a blow, and he shot it dead himself, after which they all dragged it out, and beat it to their hearts' content. Two days afterwards we were told of another cobra in a hole of a tree at the bottom of the garden; but while A—— was preparing his gun, one of the snake-conjurers came and charmed it out of its hole, and brought it into the garden to show us: it was quite fresh, its teeth not extracted, and its bite certain death; but this man had it perfectly under command: he set it up and made it dance, and, when it tried to strike, he just whisked the tail of his gown in its face, and quieted it again. I offered to buy it, and pay him for killing and bottling it, but I could not persuade him to sell it at any price: he thought its possession would bring him good luck. In answer to my offers, the butler, who was interpreter, told me,

"if Missis put snake in bottle of rack, snake dead." "I know that," said I, "I like it dead." "Yes, ma'am, but that man like 'live." "What is the use of his keeping it alive? sometime snake bite." "No, ma'am, no can bite; that man make conjure." However, to-day the conjurer came to say that he had found another cobra, so he was willing to sell me one if I liked it. Accordingly, he took it with his bare hands out of a brass pan which he brought with him, set it up, made it show its hood and dance a little, and then put it into a bottle of spirits, which soon killed it, and I have it now on my table corked up. It is a magnificent specimen, four feet long, and quite uninjured.

The snakes have very much confirmed my belief in physiognomy. They certainly have a great deal of countenance; a cunning, cruel, spiteful look that tells at once that they are capable of any mischief; in short, "*beaucoup de caractère*," and the more venomous the snake, the worse his expression. The harmless ones *look* harmless; I think I should almost know a "too much good snake" by his too much bad countenance. The Cobra is the worst, his eyes are quite hideous; and that boa constrictor at the Cape was very disgusting: but after all I do not know that there is anything more horrid in the way of physiognomy than a shark; there is a coldblooded, fishy malignity in his eyes that quite makes one shudder.

September 26th.—There was a hyæna killed to-day about half a mile from the town: it had attacked a poor old Bramin, and wounded him severely, which is very extraordinary, as they almost always run away from men. I have ordered the tail to be kept as a trophy for Frank. Also I have a beautiful leopard's skin for him, to be sent by the first opportunity.

* * * * * * *

LETTER THE TWELFTH.

Rajahmundry, October 3rd.

In your last letter you ask for particulars of living, servants, house-rent, and such-like domestic matters. We have a house unfurnished, and a garden of more than two acres, for which we pay about 60*l.* per annum. Provisions are cheap, but there is great waste, because nothing will keep on account of the heat, and we are obliged to take much larger quantities of meat than we can consume, in order to make it worth the butcher's while to supply us at all. We send for potatoes from Madras, as they will not grow here; other vegetables we have from our own garden, and we keep our own poultry. Servants are expensive altogether, though cheap individually; but we are obliged to have such a number of them that their pay mounts up. We keep fewer than many people, because we wish to be economical. Here is our establishment:—one butler, one dress-boy,* one matee,† two ayahs, one amah,‡ one cook, one tunnicutchy,§ two gardeners, six bearers, one water-carrier, two horse-keepers, two grass-cutters, one dog-boy, one poultry-man, one washerman, one tailor, one hunter, and one amah's cook—altogether twenty-seven: and this is reckoned few; and it is as much as ever they can do to get through their little work in their lazy dawdling way. If anybody comes to dinner, the cook sits down and cries for a cook's maty or helper, and I am obliged to hire one for him. They all find their own food themselves, and the caste people would not touch any of our food; but the maties and under-servants are generally Pariahs, and are very glad to eat up anything they can lay their hands on. The amah is a caste woman, and her whims are the plague of my life: I am obliged to keep a cook on purpose for her, because her food must all be

* Valet.
† The matee cleans plate, washes china, and lights candles.
‡ Wet-nurse. § Housemaid.

dressed by a person of her own caste; and even then she will sometimes starve all day rather than eat it, if she fancies anybody else has been near it: she has a house built of cocoa-nut leaves in the compound, on purpose to cook her food in. I am also obliged to keep a separate nurse for her baby, and see after it regularly myself, because they are so careless about their own children when they are nursing other people's, that she and her husband would let the poor little creature die from neglect, and then curse us as the cause of it.

Think of the amah's being caught drinking rack and eating opium! She used to go out and howl so that the servants were afraid to come near her, saying she made "one pishashi (devil) noise." When she had cleared the coast with her pishashi-ing, her own people crept out from their hiding-holes, and brought her rack and bang (that is, spirits and opium).

You ask what shops we have. None at all: the butler buys everything in the bazaar or market, and brings in his bill every day. One of the Court native writers translates it into English, and very queer articles they concoct together! such as, "one beef of rump for biled;"—"one mutton of line beef for *alamoor estoo*," meaning *à-la-mode stew*;—"mutton for curry pups" (puffs);—"durkey for stups" (stuffing for turkey);—"eggs for saps, snobs, tips, and pups" (chops, snipes, tipsycake, and puffs);—"mediation (medicine) for ducks;"—and at the end "ghirand totell" (grand total), and "howl balance."

October 15th.—Of late I have been hindered from letter-writing and everything else by relays of stranger-company—true Indian-fashion. People say this custom of receiving everybody without previous notice, and being received in return, is "so very delightful," "hospitable," &c. &c.; and so it may be,—but it is also extremely inconvenient and disagreeable. I cannot get over the dislike to intrude myself upon people whom I never saw, and who *must* receive me whether they like it or not; neither do I enjoy being put out of my way and obliged to turn the house out of windows for chance travellers whom I never heard of before, and never shall see again. However, such is the mode here. One of our visitors, Mrs. S., was a very pleasing person, and I should have much liked to see more of her; but she was on her way to England, and only stayed with us two

days. Two of our visitors are with us still, and will remain till they have found a bungalow to suit them, as they are coming to live here: they are Mr. and Mrs. Hamilton, the new registrar and his wife.

We have had the English service now for the last month, and mean to continue it regularly; A—— officiates, as is the custom when there is no clergyman: all the English residents attend very regularly, and some half-caste Protestants. There is a Roman Catholic half-caste dresser, or surgeon's assistant, named Rozer, father to Sergeant Keeling's wife: there is a little Roman Catholic chapel under his care, and he takes a great deal of pains about it, poor soul! keeping it clean, lighting the candles, and putting flowers before the images, though there is no priest living here, nor any one to notice him. When our service was announced, he sent a message to ask if he might be present at it, but when the day arrived he never appeared; and on making inquiry, we found from the Sergeant that poor Rozer himself was very anxious to attend, but was afraid of a reprimand from some distant priest who occasionally comes here in the course of his travels.

October 27th.—I continue to like "up country," as they call it, far better than the Presidency: it is much more amusing. Of course everybody tried to make Madras as English as they could, though without much success, except doing away with everything curious; but this place is real India, and I am every day seeing something new and foreign. This is the country of the old Rajahs, and they are very sociable and fond of paying us visits. They think it a great incivility to appear without something in their hands as a present. It is contrary to regulation to accept anything of value, so they bring limes, oranges, yams, &c. The other day we received a basket of oranges, with a message that a Rajah whom we had not before seen would come next day and pay us a visit. Accordingly next day, at the appointed hour, we heard a queer kind of twanging and piping, like a whistle and a Jew's-harp. This was the Rajah's music, played before his palanquin: then came his guards,—men with halberds; then his chief officer, carrying a silver mace; then his principal courtiers, running by the side of his palanquin to keep him "pleasant company." When they all arrived, the halberdiers grounded their

arms, and the whole cortège stopped at the military word of command, "*Halt! Present! Fire!*" but the *firing* consisted of the old gentleman's getting out of his palanquin, and quietly shuffling into the house, between two rows of his own servants and ours, salaming him at every step. He was dressed in a clear muslin pelisse, with his black skin showing through; the rims of his ears stuck full of jewels, gold bracelets on his arms, and a diamond locket hung round his neck. I call him "Penny Whistle Row:" if that is not quite his real name, it is so like it, I am sure it must mean that. When he came into the drawing-room, he stopped at the entrance (N.B. we have no doors) to make us most profound salams, which we returned to the best of our ability: then he presented us with an orange each, and there were more salams on either side. At last, when we had all done all our "moppeing and moweing," he sat down and began his chirp. He paid a variety of set compliments, as they all do; but, those over, he was more curious about European matters than the natives in general are. In particular he wished to know whether it was true that our King was dead, and that we had a woman to reign over us. This was quite beyond his comprehension—how she was to contrive to reign, and how *men* were to agree to obey her, he gave up in despair. He asked whether the King's death would make any difference to us: he was in hopes it might have given A—— a step in the service. He invited us to come and spend a week with him, which we fully intend to do as soon as the weather allows. When he had sat about an hour, he took his leave with the same ceremonies as at his arrival: salams on all sides, pipe whistling, Jew's-harp twanging, guards recovering arms, courtiers putting on their shoes, and all marching off to the word of command as before, "*Halt! Present! Fire!*" At parting he shook hands to show how European his manners were, and he took leave of *me* in English: "My Lady, I now to your Excellency say farewell: I shall hope you to pay me one visit, and on one week go (meaning *hence*) I shall come again to see the face of your honour civilian."

Besides the Rajahs, there are a number of natives of lower rank who are very fond of calling to keep themselves in remembrance in case of an appointment falling vacant. Some only

come as far as the gate, and stand there to make a salam when we go out. These never speak, but they put on some part of the dress belonging to the situation they want, in order that we may understand their meaning. A Court writer in expectance holds writing materials in his hand; a Peon sticks a dagger in his belt, &c. Others of rather higher pretensions come to the house and pay a visit. One of them calls regularly twice a-week, and the same dialogue takes place whenever he comes.

Visitor.—Salam, great chief!

A.—Salam to you.

Visitor.—Your Excellency is my father and my mother!

A.—I am much obliged to you.

Visitor.—Sar, I am come to behold your honourable face.

A.—Thank you. Have you anything to say to me?

Visitor.—Nothing, great chief!

A.—Neither have I anything to say, so good morning; enough for to-day.

Visitor.—Enough; good morning, sar: great chief, salam!

One has to dismiss one's own visitors, as they generally think it an impoliteness to go away of their own accord. We are obliged to appoint a particular hour at which they may come, else they would be hindering us the whole day.

* * * * * *

LETTER THE THIRTEENTH.

* * * * *

Rajahmundry, October 31st.

We are very eager about our intended Native School—writing, and planning, and preparing. The difficulty, as usual, has been to find a proper master. In this part of India there are no native Christians, and of course we did not wish to have a Heathen master. On Sunday there came unexpectedly to the service a half-caste stranger. As we had never seen him there before, A—— made some inquiries about him afterwards, and heard that he was here only for a couple of days on some business of a lawsuit; that he understands English well, writes a good hand, and spells correctly; and it looked respectable and well-disposed his taking the opportunity of coming to church. He is now gone back to his own home; but, as he seemed promising, and we knew of no one better, A—— has written to offer him the schoolmaster's post, if he understands Gentoo; and we are now waiting for his answer. Meanwhile we are busy giving it out among the natives, and collecting promises of scholars. To-day one of the upper Court servants (post-office head writer), called for a chat, so we documentized him, and he offered to look for scholars. A—— asked whether, if we set up a girls' school, any girls would come; but Seenevasarow said, "No: what for girls learn?" We had a great discussion on the subject, but he ended by saying that if a girl learned to read, some misfortune was sure to happen to her relations—most likely her father or mother would die. We told him that *I* had learned both to read and to write, and my father and mother were alive and well, and that all European ladies learnt reading and writing, and yet no misfortune happened to any of their relations in consequence; but he said, "Ah! Europe people never mind—never hurt; only native people hurt." A—— told him that it was a notion the

Pishashi (devil) put into their heads in order to keep them from any good—and a great deal more besides; to which he answered, "Hum! sometime very true; but how can do? girl got no sense!" The consequence of this notion is, that the women, from being utterly neglected, are a hundred times worse than the men. As soon as European children are old enough to talk and understand, one is obliged to have bearers to attend upon them, because it is not safe to trust them with the women; they are so wicked, so lying, and so foolish.

The cool weather is coming on now: thermometer 86° and 84°. From having been completely *heated through* in the summer, I am now pretty well Indianized, and find the present temperature quite cool and pleasant. In the early mornings it is 74°, which feels so cold that I am glad of a cloak to go out with. The same degree of the thermometer certainly does not feel so hot here as it would at home.

There are so many changes in the service, that we shall probably not remain at this station very long, and we may be glad of a removal when the hot season returns; but, for the present, this place is so pleasant and so very pretty, that I should be quite sorry to leave it. Everybody says that the view from our windows is one of the most beautiful in all this part of India. We have just succeeded in putting the garden into nice order, and are are feeling quite settled and comfortable. I have three little deer tethered on the lawn: they are very pretty creatures, and quite tame and friendly. Also I am taming some fine jungle peacocks.

To-night the hunter brought in a superb leopard (dead); they had shot him in looking for game; his beauty was still perfect, and in my own heart I was almost sorry such a handsome creature should have been killed; but they are very mischievous among the cattle, and a price is paid by Government for every one killed. The skins all belong to the Collector; but I mean to beg this one of him, as it was caught during our reign.

Now, in the cool nights, the hyænas and jackals come constantly into our garden, and howl under the windows: it is a most unpleasant noise, like a human being in agony. This morning I was told that "a cat had run away with a child." I was horror-struck, and thought it must have been a hyæna;

but on inquiry I found the child was nothing but a young pigeon —"pigeon-child," as they explained it. The ducks laid a number of eggs, which were brought for us to see. "You must make little ducks," said the Master. "Sar, I shall do," said the butler. I laughed at the order; but a hen was caught, put into a basket with the eggs, and the lid shut down upon her; and in a little time I was told there were "four babies" in the poultry-yard.

I have just received a letter from the Madras Moonshee, who begs to express "the concern I have for your happiness as my matron, your state of health, and the state of my rising matron, your child." I suppose he thinks *matron* is the feminine of *patron*.

November 3rd.—One evening, while the Hamiltons and several other visitors were still with us, I had gone to my room to rest a little before tea, when I suddenly heard a queer familiar twang in the drawing-room, which, though I could not distinguish a word, I was sure could only come through a French nose. Presently Maty brought a note from the Collector to beg us to help his friend M. d'Arzel on his journey; so I went into the drawing-room to receive him. There I found all my party of Englishmen working for their lives at French politesses, such as, "Permetty, Mushoo."—"Mushoo, je suis très aisy," &c. Monsieur himself was a true Frenchman, not at all *distingué* (an agent to one of the great French mercantile houses), but most completely at his ease, and ready for his company whatever it might be—keeping up conversation, and finding answers to English speeches in French, that I am sure it was impossible for him to understand. He addressed some remark to Mrs. Hamilton, which only meeting with a stare from her, Mr. Hamilton answered for her, "*Elle ne parle pas, Moseer!*"—"A—h!" said the Frenchman, in a tone of most commiserating surprise. I believe he thought she was dumb.

He had contrived to travel from Madras, four hundred miles, without knowing one word of any of the native languages, or of English, making himself understood merely by signs. We gave him his supper, ordered his bearers, and sent him on. After he was gone, the Englishmen began talking over all the French adventures of their past lives, and I discovered that they were,

as school-girls say, "very fond of French," not to say proud of it, and many Frenchmen had told them all—the innocent birds!—that they spoke it quite like natives. When Mr. Hamilton and some friend of his were travelling in France together, they took it in turn to give the orders at the inns, because "one man could not speak French every day:" but the friend often grew restive; he used to call to the waiter, "Gassor!" "Monsieur." "Now, Hamilton, I wish you would tell him." "No, indeed; it is not my turn; I spoke French yesterday." "Well then, I won't. It is impossible to talk their nonsense: Gassor, ally vous or."

One of our visitors at this time was a young ensign of seventeen, travelling in command of a company of Sepoys in charge of treasure, and it was quite a pleasure to see a creature so innocently important and happy. He travelled on horseback, and had a pony which he talked of just like a human being, and admired as much as any hero. He was attacked by some wild native horses at the entrance of the village—so, he said, "I took off my saddle and bridle, and set my pony at them; and if the people had not come and separated them, I know he would soon have licked them all. He is a capital fellow!" I saw his pony afterwards, the ugliest Pariah beast I ever set eyes on! You must know people here talk of high-caste and Pariah horses, Pariah dogs, &c. The native horses are Pariahs, the high-caste are Arabs. I have a high-caste horse, who is so excessively puffed up with pride that he will not bear the sight of a pony: I am obliged to make the horse-keeper run before me to clear the way of all ponies, or else this creature fights them, with me on his back.

November 23rd.—Our school is now opened with about twenty-five boys, and more coming. All caste boys. A—— thinks it better to teach them whenever one can, as it is far more difficult to get at them than at the Pariahs, and also the education of the upper ranks has much more influence than that of the Pariahs. We have a Bramin to teach Gentoo, and David Gonsalves, the half-caste, to teach English. I went to see them the other morning. (Tell your charity-school girls at home that they come at six o'clock, and are always in time!) The Bramins and merchant boys sat together; there was another row of the Moochy or workman caste; another of Mussulman boys;

and, behind all, a row of grown-up men, who come to amuse themselves by watching and picking up a little by listening: but they talk, and are very troublesome, so they are in future only to be admitted on examination days. We have but few books, as they are very expensive, and the whole cost of the school must devolve upon the Hamiltons and ourselves; therefore we mean to spend our money in good books, which will be useful for them to read, and not in mere spelling-books. I make great pasteboard columns, with alphabets, spelling and first lessons, in large printing hand. One column does for the whole school to learn from at once, and we mean to keep to these till the boys can read a little, so as really to make use of a book. I have printed a number of texts to hang round the school-room, and the first text I chose for my poor little heathens was Psalm cxv. 4—8. I dare say by sending to Madras, by and by, we may be able to get printed sheets of lessons; but the wind has set in now the wrong way for ships coming from Madras, and parcels sent by land are a long while on the road, and, as our scholars are ready, we do not like to wait. You must understand that we have no immediate hope of making *Christians* of these boys by our teaching, but we wish to "do what we can:" this kind of school is all we can do for them, and I fully believe that, if schools were set up all over the country, it would go far towards shaking their Heathenism, by putting truth into their heads, at any rate, instead of falsehood.

LETTER THE FOURTEENTH.

December 15th.

We are just returned from our long-promised visit to Penny-Whistle, after a very amusing excursion, though, if I had known what an undertaking the journey would be, I should never have attempted it, or rather A—— never would have consented to it, however urgent my curiosity might have made me. However, we are safe at home again, and the journey has done us nothing but good. When the time came for us to start, according to appointment, A—— said he thought it would be scarcely worth the trouble, and that we should be "more quiet and comfortable at home"—such a thorough John Bull!—but I made him go, as I wished to "see a little of life." The people had told us that the distance was fifteen miles; so we expected that, starting at half-past five in the afternoon, we should arrive about ten o'clock, in time for a good night's rest. But it turned out to be thirty miles, and no road; we had to grope our way over cotton-fields, a pouring rain during almost all the night coming down in such torrents that I could not hear the bearers' song, pitch-dark, and the ground almost all the way knee-deep in water. We were twelve hours splashing and wading through the mud, and "plenty tired" when we arrived. But a palanquin is much less fatiguing than a carriage, and an hour's sleep and a good breakfast soon set us to rights.

When we arrived at Dratcharrum, the Rajah's town, we were taken to a choultry,* which he had prepared and ornamented with bits of old carpet for our first reception. I could not imagine why we did not go to his house at once, according to his invitation; but I found afterwards that he had arranged our going first to the choultry, in order that he might send for us in state to his mud palace. All his principal people came to pay

* Building for the reception of native travellers. It is generally open to the air, and much less convenient than a 'Traveller's Bungalow.'

their compliments, and he sent us a very good breakfast; and when we had eaten it, his Gomashta (a sort of secretary, at least more like that than anything else) came to say that all things were ready for our removal. I expected something of a row at starting, but I was quite unprepared for the uproar he had provided for us. As soon as our palanquins were taken into the street, a gang of musicians started up to play before us with all their might; a sort of performance much like an imitation of one of Rossini's most noisy overtures played by bagpipes, hurdy-gurdies, penny trumpets and kettle-drums, all out of tune. Then came banners, swords, flags, and silver sticks; then heralds to proclaim our titles, but we could not make out what they were; and then dancing-girls. A—— looked rather coy at being, as he said, "made such a fool of;" but when the dancing-girls began their antics, ankle-deep in the mud, the whole turn-out was so excessively absurd, that mortal gravity could stand it no longer, and he was obliged to resign himself to his fate, and laugh and be happy like me.

When we arrived at the palace, on entering the gateway, the first thing I saw was a very fine elephant making his salam; side by side with him a little wooden rocking-horse; the court filled with crowds of ragged retainers, and about fifty or more dancing-girls, all bobbing and bowing, salaming and anticking "nineteen to the dozen." At last we came to the Rajah's own hall, where we found him, the pink of Hindoo politeness, bestowing more flowers of speech upon us in a quarter of an hour than one could gather in all England in a twelvemonth. He ushered us to the rooms prepared for us, and stayed with us for some time to have a talk, surrounded by all his retinue. His palace consisted of a number of courts, walled in, unpaved, and literally ankle-deep in mud. We could not cross them, but all round there was a raised narrow pathway of hard earth, which we crept round, holding on by the wall for fear of slipping into the mud beneath. Our apartments consisted of one of these courts and the rooms belonging to it. At one end was a room, or rather gallery, which they call a hall, open to the court on one side, without any doors or windows; a small room at each end of the large one, and a sort of outer yard for the servants. The three other sides of the square communicated with other courts of the

same kind, one opening into the Rajah's own hall. In the middle of our gallery there was a wooden alcove overhanging the street, in which Penny-Whistle sits and smokes when he is alone. The furniture was a table, a carpet, four chairs, two cane sofas, and a footstool. The room was hung with pictures of Swamies by native artists, two French looking-glasses in fine frames, fastened to the wall in their packing-cases, the lids being removed for the occasion, and two little shaving-glasses with the quicksilver rubbed off the back. Penny-Whistle was very fond of his pictures, and sent for some other great coloured prints of hares and foxes to show us. They had been given him by an Englishman long ago, and the colour was rubbed off in many places, so I offered to mend them for him, which greatly pleased him. While I was filling up the holes in his foxes' coats with a little Vandyke brown, he stood by crossing his hands and exclaiming, "Ah! all same as new! wonderful skill!" and A—— took the opportunity to put in his usual lecture concerning the advisableness of girls' education. Penny-Whistle said he thought it was a very fine thing to teach girls, but that his people were "too much stupid," and did not like it, and he would not go contrary to their prejudices, &c. When we were tired of him we dismissed him, as the natives think it a great impoliteness to go away till they are desired; so, when we had talked as long as we could, A—— said that I was going to sleep, for that he (Penny-Whistle) "must be aware that sleep was a very good thing." That is the proper formula. When the peons come to report their going away to eat their rice, they always inform me that I "must be aware that eating is a very good thing, and necessary to a man's life."

After we were rested and brisk again, Penny sent us our dinner. We had brought with us, at his desire, plates, knives and forks, bread and beer, and he sent us, besides, all his own messes, native-fashion, brass trays lined with leaves, and a different little conundrum on each leaf; pillaws, quantities of pickles, ten or a dozen varieties of chutnies, different vegetables, and cakes made of grease, pepper, and sugar. The Bramins of Penny-Whistle's class always have their food served on the leaves of the banyan-tree.

After dinner he took us out to see the town: we in our palan-

quins, and he in his tonjon,* and all his ragged robins piping and drumming before us. The whole town of course turned out to see the show: one of A——'s palanquin doors was shut, so Penny stopped his procession and came to beg that A—— would do him the favour to keep it all open, and "show himself to the multitude." The town was all built of mud: the bettermost houses whitewashed, but the others not even that, and the streets ankle-deep in the mud washed off from the houses; but in the midst of all this dirt and discomfort, some little bit of tinsel would peep out at every opportunity: women covered with ornaments from head to foot, peeping out of the mud-hovels; men with superb Cashmere shawls looking quite beggarly from rags and dirt. This is "Eastern splendour;"—a compound of mud and magnificence, filth and finery. Penny-Whistle is a great Prince in his little way, one of the old hereditary Rajahs of the highest caste. In the course of our expedition he took us to see the pagoda. I had never before been inside one, and was very curious to know what it really was. First, there was a high wall round a large square compound; in the middle of each wall an immensely high gateway. This gateway is the pyramid-like building that one sees outside, and that I always supposed to be the pagoda, but I find it is only the portico. On entering the principal gateway, it was such a large place, that I thought we were inside the pagoda itself, but we went through to the compound, and inside that there was another very high wall round a square court, with one porch opposite the principal entrance: on going into this we found ourselves in the pagoda. It was a wonderful, dreamy, light-headed sort of a place, a low roof, and an interminable perspective of rows of massive, grotesque pillars, vanishing in darkness—I could not see the end of them—with many dark recesses in the walls, and here and there a strange, white-turbaned figure, just glancing out for a moment, and disappearing again in the darkness: altogether I never was in a place that gave me so much the feeling of a light-headed dream. In the middle of the court, round which these galleries of pillars ran, was the Swamy-house, or place in which the idol is enshrined. They brought us opposite to it, and by stooping a little I could have seen all the inside, but I thought that perhaps some of the lookers-on might

* A kind of open sedan-chair.

fancy I was bowing down to the god, so I would not run the risk.

When we came back to Penny's house, we found it all lighted up with stinking torches, and the constant native amusement of nautch* and fireworks, and crowds of spectators. We stayed with him as long as we could endure the heat, din, and glare, and then went to our own rooms. There we found everything such a complete contrast to the native taste, that we could scarcely fancy ourselves only a hundred yards from all the Rajah's row. Our matee had lighted the candles, and placed our tea-things, books, and drawing materials on the table, all looking as quiet and comfortable as at home. I never saw anything so curiously different from the scene of the minute before: every feeling and idea was changed in an instant. But the next day we were to see, as the Hindoos say, "all things native" again; so I asked Puntooloo (that is his real name) to let me have a ride on his elephant. He had it brought out directly, but it was such an awful affair, such an awkward ladder to mount by, so many people in the way, such a bad howdah, a present from some English gentleman of his own carpentering, and altogether so very inconvenient, that I was frightened and would not go; so I went out in my palanquin, and the elephant walked before me, to see Penny's garden, as he called it, a muddy swamp full of betel-nut and cocoa-nut trees.

When we returned to the house, he introduced me to his wife: I had been longing to see her, but did not dare ask it for fear of distressing his feelings; however, he proposed it himself. They brought her when A—— was out of the room. She was an immense creature, but young, with rather a good sphinx-like face, —altogether much like a handsome young feather bed,—dressed in green muslin embroidered with gold, and covered with jewels from top to toe, besides a belt of gold coins round her waist. All her attendant women came with her and stood at the door. The Rajah's Gomashta stood by, to order her about and teach her manners, and one of my peons acted as interpreter. When she first came in, she twirled, or rather rolled, round and round, and did not know what to do, so the Gomashta bid her make salaam, and sit down on a chair; and then I did the same. We

* Dancing girls.

did not know much of each other's languages—she nothing of mine, and I only enough of Gentoo to be aware that the peon mistranslated every speech we made, and invented the conversation according to his own taste, making it consist entirely of most furious compliments on either side. She was very curious about my clothes, especially my bonnet, which she poised upon her forefinger, and spun round like a top. I showed her some pictures; she held them upside down, and admired them very much. She seemed well amused and comfortable till A—— came accidentally into the room, when she jumped up, wheeled round so as to turn her broad back to him, and waddled off as fast as her fat sides would let her. Of course, he went away directly, not wishing to hurt her modesty; and as soon as he was gone she came mincing back again, reseated herself with all sorts of affected airs and graces, and sent him a condescending message to "beg he would not distress himself, for that he was her father and mother." She did not mind the peons and servants standing by.

While she remained with me, A—— went and sat with Penny-Whistle, and took the opportunity of being alone with him to try to do him a little good. He was very ready to listen, unusually so for a Bramin, and did not refuse to take some books; so next day we sent him plenty, and I have written to Madras for a Gentoo Bible for him, well bound, that he may like it. I wish, when you have an opportunity, you would send me some of those twopenny "moral pocket-handkerchiefs" with alphabets and pictures on them; also some children's penny pictures, especially anything of the Queen. They would be most acceptable presents to the natives. I took Penny some drawings I had made for him of subjects likely to suit his taste, particularly an eruption of Mount Vesuvius, on account of the red flames. I put the drawings in a blue satin portfolio, embroidered with scarlet and gold, and poor Penny was enchanted with the whole concern.

We came home on a dry night, quite safely, and found all well; but another unexpected stranger visitor had arrived the night we were away, and was established in our house ready to receive us: however, he was an agreeable person, and we liked his company.

In your last letter you ask if we have been alarmed by an

insurrection of which the newspapers have spoken. I never heard of any one being frightened at it, and it is all quiet now. It was six hundred miles from Madras, and I never even heard any particulars of it till this gentleman passed through. He had been engaged in helping to quell it. He told me that a new tribe, hitherto unknown, had been discovered among the rebels: a fine, manly, but fierce race, showing many traces of Jewish origin, both in countenance and habits. They worshipped an invisible God, but had also one wretched image perched on a tree, which they seemed to look upon as a sort of devil to be propitiated. Unlike the other natives of India, they all lived in houses, boarded, floored, and ceiled with cedar-wood.

LETTER THE FIFTEENTH.

December 21st.

I HAVE just despatched a letter to you, and I owe eight to other people, therefore I begin another to you; that, I perceive, is your method with regard to me, which I highly approve.

* * * * * *

To-day arrived the little parcel which you sent from England by the Hindoo servants. Poor things! the ship in which they sailed was wrecked off the Cape: no lives were lost, but the whole of the cargo was destroyed—all the little property of these two poor boys, the presents they had received in England, &c.; but in the midst of all their distress and alarm, they contrived to save my little package, and, to my very great surprise, brought it to me quite uninjured. Was it not a pretty instance of care and faithfulness?

Many thanks for the insect-box and pins, which are great treasures. I had been trying in vain to procure some, and had even sent to Calcutta, but they were unknown there. I wish we could have seen the friend you introduced to us, but he is at Madras, and we are four hundred miles off. It is very seldom that people introduced to each other from England really meet in this wide India. However, those young cadets are generally sent up the country soon after their arrival, and I hope Mr. M—— may come our way. * * *

Our school is very pretty and satisfactory, the numbers daily increasing, and no objection made to the use of our books, which is in itself a great thing. Our boys learn such parts of the Bible as have been translated, and sensible lesson-books, instead of the rubbish they are taught in their own schools. The Hamiltons and ourselves take it in turn to examine the school every Saturday evening, when all the natives who choose to come are admitted to hear what goes on. Besides this, we pay private visits in the week; and as long as the "Doories" keep

up this constant superintendence, I hope all will go on well. We have not many rules—the boys receive tickets for regular attendance, and forfeit them for non-attendance, and their rewards depend upon those tickets. When we examine them, I hear the English, and A—— the Gentoo scholars. Their English learning at present only extends to B, A, Ba; but they read the Bible in Gentoo, and A—— tries to make them understand it a little. We have a Gentoo master, a Bramin, at about 6*l.* per annum; an English master, at 30*l.*: house-rent, peon, and sweepers, about 6*l.* more; and the only other expenses will be books and rewards. The little half-caste English master is clever and willing, and does his work well. The Bramin is a solemn, stately creature, clever at teaching, but a mean old thing. He made all the boys give him a pice (half a farthing) apiece whenever he obtained them a holiday, and he was always inventing excuses and pretences for holidays, till we found out the trick.

A—— and Mr. Hamilton, who is a most kind and active coadjutor, are also establishing a Pariah school. This will be only for Gentoo. At first we had a great deal of consultation as to whether it would be best to make our scholars pay anything for admission; but, on talking it over with the natives themselves, we found it would not answer our purposes, as there were very few, even among the richest, who would be willing to pay, and we must have made the same rule for all, and our object was to teach as many as we could.

There is one little boy who comes dressed in the finest muslin, with a gold cap, and silver bangles, and emerald earrings, looking quite a little prince; but they all prefer a charity-school. They learn very quickly, and are in nice order; Mr. Hamilton says it is already superior to the N—— school, though that has been established nearly a year; but into that school they admit Pariahs, which always ruins a caste school. Even in England you could not expect a gentleman to send his son to the same school with the children of his footman, and here caste is a religious distinction, as well as a difference of rank. After any natives become Christians, it is doubtless highly desirable for the missionaries to do their utmost to induce them to give up caste, as far as it is a religious distinction; but while they are Heathens, it seems merely waste of time and trouble to attempt

it, and only prevents any but Pariahs from coming under their influence. In Bengal I hear that it is easier, as the natives there have associated more with Europeans, and their prejudices are less strong. This is strange, as their Heathenism is still worse: the suttees, Juggernaut's sacrifices, &c., were all peculiar to Bengal.

The castes are not now so unmixed as when first invented. Indeed I believe that some of the original divisions no longer exist; but they make up for it by subdividing the Sudra or merchant caste, and the common people call every different trade a caste. Ayah continually tells me "that man moochy (carpenter) caste;" or "bearer caste," &c. The shoemakers, I believe, are the lowest of any. The Pariahs are of no caste at all. Learned men think that the Sudras were the original inhabitants of the country, and the three higher castes the conquerors. Nobody seems to know much about the Pariahs; I suppose they were the refuse of all. The trades are as hereditary as the castes; every man follows his father's business, and seems to have no idea of raising himself in life, beyond making a little more money.

I wish I could, as you ask, tell you any pretty stories for your schools; but I am sorry to say they are not at all plentiful: there are very few natives who are even nominal Christians, and still fewer whom we can reasonably believe to be anything but what is here called "curry-and-rice Christians." In England, I think people have a very false impression of what is done in India. That is not the fault of the Missionaries, who write the real truth home; but the Committees seem to publish all the good and none of the bad, for fear of discouraging people. In fact, it is unreasonable to expect more to be done without more efficient means. Suppose thirty clergymen to the whole of England, —what could they do? and that is about the proportion of the Missionaries in Madras, and they have to work amongst Heathens. Perhaps about half of them know the language well, and the rest speak it like school-French. The chaplains are not Missionaries: their duties lie almost as completely amongst Europeans as if they had remained at home. Mr. C., for instance, is a very excellent, useful clergyman, with a large English and half-caste congregation, but no more a Missionary to the Heathen than your vicar. There are thousands needed

where one or two come; and schoolmasters are wanted as much as preachers.

There is great difference of opinion as to the class of men most wanted, and most likely to be useful as Missionaries. Some people have an idea that it is scarcely necessary to have persons of the birth and education of our English clergymen, but that a larger number of rather inferior men might be employed at a smaller salary, and be quite as efficient. Of course any Christian really working among the Heathen is likely to do some good; but I believe that the more educated and the more of a gentleman he is, the more influence he will have among the Hindoos. They are themselves most excellent judges of manners and standing in society, and invariably know a gentleman, and respect him accordingly. Their own priests are of the highest caste, and it lowers our religion in their eyes if they see that our *Padres*, as they call the Missionaries, are of what they consider low caste. Perhaps you will think this idea worldly, and too much like the proceedings of the Jesuits when they pretended to be a new class of Bramins; but our home clergy are gentlemen and educated men, and I cannot see why we should send out Missionaries less qualified for a much more difficult work. An English University education, and the habit of *really* hard study, prove immense advantages in mastering these native languages.

I am, as usual, expecting several visitors to-morrow, to stay till the end of next week. "Missis don't want, but no can help!" After all, perhaps, it is as well that we are obliged to have people come in this way, or we should grow quite *farouche*, for we are both always so busy, and so fond of our own habits and occupations, that I am sure we should never invite interruptions. You ask what our visitors say, "if ever they say anything?" That, you know, depends upon taste; there is anything, and anything—"fagots et fagots." However, some of them are very sensible and agreeable; and when I have them alone, they talk very well, and I like their company; but as soon as three or four of them get together they speak about nothing but "employment" and "promotion." Whatever subject may be started, they contrive to twist it, drag it, clip it, and pinch it, till they bring it round to that; and if left to themselves, they sit and conjugate the verb "to collect:" "I am a collector—He

was a collector—We shall be collectors—You ought to be a collector—They might, could, should, or would have been collectors;" so, when it comes to that, while they *conjugate* "to collect," I *decline* listening.

January 18*th.*—A—— and I have been out in the district, travelling about to see the world a little. He had a few days' holiday in his Court, and we took advantage of it to go and visit some of the places on the coast, in order to see which would be the best refuge in the hot season. Also A—— wished to inspect the proceedings of some of the District Moonsiffs, or native judges, under his orders. We left the baby at home, as she was quite safe with the old ayah, who really deserves the character she gives herself, "I too much careful woman;" and baby would have been tired, and perhaps have caught cold, with a hurried journey at this time of the year. The nights are now really cold, and the days pleasant. First we went to Narsapoor, a large native village about six miles from the sea. We did not expect to find that a good place for ourselves; but we had heard that two Missionaries were established there, and we wanted to see them, and learn how they went on, and whether there was anything we could do to make them more comfortable. They were English shoemakers, Mr. Bowden and Mr. Beer, dissenters of Mr. Grove's class, but good, zealous creatures, and in the way to be very useful. They have two pretty, young English wives, as simple as themselves. They are living completely among the natives, teaching and talking to them, and distributing books. One of them is a man of great natural talent, strong-headed, and clear and sensible in his arguments; if he had been educated, he would probably have turned out a very superior person. They complained much of the difficulties of the language; but A—— says that the two men spoke it really much better than the general run of missionaries. One of the wives said to me very innocently, "It is pertickly difficult to us, ma'am, on account of our never having learnt any language at all. I don't know what to make of the grammar." I advised her not to trouble herself with the grammar, but only to try and learn to speak the language so as to converse with the natives—to learn it, in short, as a child learns to talk. At her age, and without any education, it was next to impossible for her to learn the grammar of an Oriental language; but I do not suppose she will follow my

advice, as she had a great notion of studying, reading with Moonshees, and so on. They live almost like the natives, without either bread or meat, which in the long run is a great privation to Europeans; but they have rice, fish, fowls, and vegetables, and they say, "The Lord has brought down our appetites to what he gives us to feed them on." Though *they* could get no meat, we had our choice of all the sheep in the village, as I suppose the natives would kill themselves for the Judge if he would but eat them. We did not want mutton for ourselves, but we had a sheep killed in order to send it to the Missionaries, together with some bread, and a little supply of wine, to have by them in case of illness. They had not much of a school, only five or six boys; I do not think that schooling will ever be their vocation. They seem most likely to do good by conversing and associating familiarly with the natives. They said that the people in general were not only willing, but anxious, to talk with them and take their books, and to come and ask them questions; but one day Mr. Bowden went out with his tracts, and took his stand as usual in the bazaar, when a number of people, headed by some Bramins, came round him "a jeering and a hooting." The Bramins had nothing to say for themselves, but stood interrupting, mocking, and sneering, till they were tired, and then they said, "Now we have done laughing at you, you may go away—Go!" "No," said Bowden; "now you have done laughing at me, I shall stay here, and give away all my books;" and so he did, and the Bramins walked off, and left him the coast clear. One man said that it was of no use preaching to *him*, for that he was quite perfect and free from sin—he was sure he had no sin at all. Bowden gave him a sheet of paper, and told him to write down in black ink all the good things he did, and in red ink all the bad things he did, and to bring the paper to him at the end of a week. At the end of the week the man came, and said he still considered himself free from sin, but did not wish to show the paper! However, he seemed a little disconcerted, and will probably return before long with more inquiries.

After we left Narsapoor, we went round to several different villages on the coast, and have decided on establishing ourselves during the hot weather at Samuldavee. There is only one small bungalow, and no village near it; but it is close to the sea,

and I hope will be cool. We returned home in one night's run of fifteen hours, which was "plenty long;" but a palanquin is much less fatiguing than a carriage. I find it the best way, instead of undressing and settling for the night at first starting, to begin the journey, all as usual, and to send on a Peon about twelve miles before us, to get ready fire and milk; and when we come up with him we have our palanquins put under trees, and remain there about half an hour, undress and take some coffee, and so settle for the night much more comfortably. Palanquin travelling pleases me very much: I can sleep a good part of the night, and, being able to sit up or lie down at pleasure, with plenty of room, I find it far less fatiguing than being cramped up all day in a carriage.

In passing through the villages, the head men, Moonsiffs,* Cutwalls,† &c., always turn out to come and make salaam while we are changing bearers, and we sit up and do our congées in our dressing-gowns and nightcaps, quite agreeable. However, as we had seen them all in coming, and as it was a very long run, we did not want to be disturbed again in the middle of the night; so we sent a Peon on before to announce that the Judge certainly was to pass through, but that he would be fast asleep and could speak to nobody, and that he must be transferred from the shoulders of one set of bearers to the other without touching the ground, all of which was performed according to order. About three in the morning we were awakened by the silence and stillness: the bearers' song had stopped, and our palanquins were quietly set down on the ground, and no one near us. A—— got out to see what was the matter, and he found that we were in a cocoa-nut tope, the bearers all employed in stealing toddy,‡ and our palanquins completely laden with paddy,§ which they had stolen from the fields in coming along! It would have been a pretty story, if we had not found it out in time, the Judge returning to his Zillah, with his palanquins laden with stolen paddy, and his bearers tipsy with stolen toddy!

We found all well at home, and a large packet of European letters waiting to greet us, which would in itself be enough to make all well.

* Native judges. † Head men of a village.

‡ Juice of the cocoa-nut leaves. It is collected in earthen vessels, and left to ferment, when it becomes very intoxicating.

§ Rice in the ear.

LETTER THE SIXTEENTH.

We have had a good deal of trouble with the school lately, which is very vexatious, because it really was going on beautifully; forty-five boys in constant attendance, reading and translating the Bible, using our books in school without the slightest objection, and asking for tracts to take home. But a little while ago there came a Mr. G., a Dissenting Missionary, to visit the Hamiltons: he was a conceited, show-off sort of person, and curiously ignorant. He dined with us one day, and also the Prices, who were staying with us, Mr. Lloyd, Commander of the detachment, and our Scotch Doctor. The Hamiltons had headaches, and did not come, and I am sure I do not wonder, after their having had to attend to Mr. G.'s clatter for two days. At our house he chose, *à propos* of nothing, to begin a discussion concerning the evil of the Bishops being in the House of Lords, and various other delinquencies and enormities of the Church, including the bigotry of supposing that ordination would make any one a minister, unless he was a godly man. Lloyd said nothing—he never does; the Scotch Doctor sided with Mr. G.; Captain Price thought the Church of England must be right, though he could not say why; A—— quoted all the old divines, and I slipped in texts; Mr. G. quoted Mosheim (that is to say, he did not quote him, but he mentioned him) as an authority, not in matters of history, but on points of divinity; and he declared that he did not know of any such text as "Not forsaking the assembling of yourselves together;" and when it was proved by chapter and verse, he said one must consider such a text as that well before one could arrive at the real meaning, for that it never could mean us to meet for public worship with an indifferent minister, and that it would be much better to stay and read one's Bible at home. The Doctor said, "According to quhat ye're a saying then, ye must have got yer Church of England airdination from some o' the Pops." A——: "Very

likely." Doctor S.: "Wall, and d'ye think it can be good for anything whan it 's passed through all those rogs?" I suppose the end of the discussion might be, that Mr. G. thought us very bigoted, and we thought him very superficial and ignorant. After this, Mr. Hamilton took him to preach at the school, and ordered all the boys to attend. They did not tell A—— what they were going to do, or he would not have allowed it; for although he is only too thankful to be able to help the Missionaries to preach on their own responsibility, when, where, and however they can, he thinks it both wrong and inexpedient for people in authority to accompany them, as it sets the natives on their guard directly, and persuades them that the Government are going to make them Christians by force, as the Moormans made them Mohammedans. In the present instance it raised a great disturbance. In addition to the preaching, Mr. G. got hold of a man's Lingum, or badge of caste, and took it away; and though he was forced to return it, the whole town has been in a ferment at the insult, and our school is almost broken up in consequence. The boys brought back in a rage all the bags I had given them to put their tickets in, and said they never would come to school again. We have now only twenty boys, instead of forty-five, and they are all petitioning to use their own Heathen books, instead of ours, and we have no more requests for admittance. A little while ago, when we came in from our morning's ride, we used almost every day to find a pretty boy waiting at the gate, salaaming, and presenting his petition to be sent to school. I hope we shall be able to bring it round again in time, but it is very vexatious.

We are reading Shore's 'Notes on Indian Affairs,'—very clever, true, and amusing. He complains much of the English incivility to the natives; and I quite agree with him: it is a great shame. A—— says he exaggerates, but I really do not think so. A——, being an old Indian, is grown used to things that strike us griffins. The civilians behave better than the military, though all are bad enough. The other day an old Bramin of high caste called on us while the Prices were in the house; Captain Price, hearing his voice, sauntered out of the next room with his hands in his waistcoat-pockets, and planted himself directly before the poor old creature, without taking any

other notice of all his salaams and compliments than "Well, old fellow, where are you going?" in a loud, rude voice. The Bramin answered with the utmost apparent respect, but I saw *such* an angry scowl pass over his face. A little politeness pleases them very much, and they have a good right to it. The upper classes are exceedingly well bred, and, many of them are the descendants of native princes, and ought not to be treated like dirt.

A new magazine is just advertised as coming out at Madras. It is to be conducted by some of the clergymen, in opposition to another periodical, conducted by some others of the clergymen. The first number is to contain strictures on a review which appeared last month in the other magazine. I grudge the waste of time and thought upon such useless work. The writers come out here, they themselves, and everybody else, believing they will work among the Heathen; and while the Idol services are going on all round them, they sit writing their reviews and anti-reviews to the sound of the Pagoda bell!

The other night I was sitting in my Tonjon sketching a pagoda, when I saw a long procession of Bramins go in, and suddenly the service began. I could hear it all, through the walls. The first part sounded exactly like a Roman Catholic mass. There was music, and the mumbling chant of the old priests who could not sing, and the shrill voices of the choir-boys, and at intervals a little bell tinkling; till it was all interrupted by violent screams from girls' voices—perhaps they were meant for singing, but they sounded very horrible: then came loud beating of drums and ringing of bells, and it was all finished.

February 3rd.—We are just come in from the school, the first time I have been there since Mr. G.'s unlucky visit. Some of the deserters have returned, but about fifteen are still obstinate. They all crowded round me, saying, "Good ivning, Sar!" I tried to teach them to say "Ma'am," and explained that "Sir" belonged to the "Doory;" but a Peon who understands a little English, and is extremely proud of his knowledge, would help, and teach them to say "Mammon:" so they got it perfect, "Good ivning, Mammon!" They are very boasting and confidential, and I am very sympathetic. "Sar! I larn very good; I am second man." "I am very glad to hear it—

very good man." "And *I* larn too much good too! I am tree man." "That is right; you are a very good man too." Then they salaam and grin, and are very happy. I show them pictures, which makes me popular. The head boys are learning to write English: and to-day they made a petition to be allowed "Europe ink," as they could not write English words with Gentoo ink.

I have been trying to procure some of the cobra capello's poison for Frank to analyse; and also the native antidotes, the principal of which is a small, smooth, very light black stone which they apply to the bite, and they say that it adheres till it has drawn out all the poison, and then falls off. To-day the snake-charmer brought three fresh caught cobras to give me their poison. He set them up, and made them dance as usual, but did not allow them to strike, as that exhausts the venom. When he had played with them as long as he liked, he shut up two of them in their baskets, and proceeded to catch the third by putting one hand on its tail, and slipping the other very quickly up to the nape of its neck, when he held it so tight as to force it to open its jaws, and then squeezed the poison into a tea-spoon. It is yellow at first, and turns red in about ten days. Each snake yielded only three drops; so think how powerful it must be! The cobra did not struggle or writhe at all while the man held it, but afterwards it seemed quite changed and subdued: it lost its spiteful look, and could not be made to stand up and strike, even when the man did his utmost to provoke it, but tried to slink quietly away, looking as if it knew it had lost its power, and was ashamed of not being able to do any mischief. I have put the poison into a little bottle, and keep it carefully covered up from the light. I shall send it home by the first opportunity. It will dry up, of course; but Dr. Stewart says it will not lose its virtue, or rather its vice, and that Frank must be careful what tricks he plays with it. The natives make pills of it, and take them for fever: I believe it is a strong narcotic. I know the bite of a cobra throws people into a stupor. General W. told me that one of his servants was bitten, and wanted to lie down and go to sleep, but the General made him run before his horse for several miles till he was quite exhausted. No harm came of the bite; but, as the snake was not caught, it was impossible to

to be certain whether it actually was a cobra. The natives think their own remedies are much assisted by conjuring. Once, when we were travelling, my bearers stopped, and one of them began to cry and howl and writhe about, saying he was stung by a scorpion in the road, and could not go on. We gave him eau de luce to rub the place with, but it did no good. One of the Peons then said he could conjure him: so he sat down before him, and began muttering, and sawing the air with his hand, making antics like animal magnetism; and in a few minutes the wounded man said he was quite well, put his shoulder under the palanquin-pole, and set off with his song again. In your last letter you ask me if the snake-charmers have any herb with them. I do not think they have anything but dexterity and presence of mind. They pretend to be conjurers, and play a number of antics, all quite absurd, but which impose upon the people. Their music seems to irritate the snakes and incite them to strike: but the snake-charmers know their distance exactly, and jump on one side. They take the snakes with perfect safety, as they know exactly where to seize them in the neck. The snakes grow very tame after a time, and the men extract the poison as fast as it collects. They begin their trade as children, so they grow up expert and fearless. The man who brought me the poison told me all his proceedings "for a consideration." He said his father was a snake-charmer before him, and used to take him out when he was quite a child, and teach him the manner of laying hold of the creatures, making him first practise upon harmless snakes; that there was no secret in it beyond dexterity: but that the people were so afraid of such "bad animals," that they "always tell conjure" when anybody was able to touch them.

LETTER THE SEVENTEENTH.

February 9th.

To-DAY the Narsapoor head of police sent me a present of a toy of his own invention. It was a representation of a justice-room. There sat the English Judge in his jacket, writing at a desk; round him all the native Gomashtas, squatted on the floor, writing at *their* desks; at the end of the room a wretched prisoner in the stocks; and, in front of the Judge, another prisoner being tried, with a great Peon by his side, holding a drawn sword in his hand to take care of him. The Englishmen and Court servants were made enormously fat, and when I asked the reason I was told it was to show how rich they were! It was a very droll performance; but I was obliged, much against my will, to refuse it. A—— said it was too good to accept, for fear of that tiresome plague John Company's finding fault. However, I confess it is a good rule. If I had accepted that, some one else would soon have brought something of more value, and in a little while they would arrive at shawls and pearls, and expect injustice in Court in consequence. When A—— is out, visitors often come to me privately, begging that I will persuade him to give them offices, or to excuse them fines and punishments, &c. Sometimes they go and make their petition to the baby if she is in another room, but she only sucks her thumb at them. When we are out in our tonjons without the "Master," the wives of the petitioners assail me, and their children the baby, screaming and throwing themselves on the ground before us. Baby likes the uproar extremely, and crows and dances in great glee. Then the petitioner comes to A—— next day, and gravely tells him that "Missy" has promised him the post in question. This Court has been for some years past very badly managed;—idle men sent as Judges, nothing inquired into, cases neglected, and so on; and the consequence is, that some of the rich natives have quite got the upper hand of honesty. One very rich Zemindar's widow owed, and

still owes, five thousand rupees to a man in this village. Instead of paying her debt, she took refuge with her son, the present Zemindar, and shut herself up in his house. One Judge after another has sent Peons with summonses to the old lady to make her pay the poor man his just due; but she cares for none of them, and the Zemindar's servants always beat the Peons, and send them away. One Judge summoned the Zemindar to account for the assault on the Peons, but he said it was no fault of his—it was the servants' pleasure: then the servants were summoned, but they ran away and hid themselves, and were not to be found all over the district. The same thing has just now happened again; but A—— will not take the excuse, and has summoned the Zemindar to account for his servants' misdemeanors, as they are in the habit of taking their pleasure in that way. He has fined him two hundred rupees, and sent word that, unless his mother's debt is paid, he shall send a battalion to seize her jewels. It remains to be proved which will gain the day: I am curious to see how it ends. Another Zemindar, choosing to protect a man who had a notification sent to him, fought the peons who delivered it, and sent it and them back again: so A—— then sent the notification to the Zemindar himself, with a polite request, or rather command, that he would himself see it served without delay. The Zemindar was frightened at this, and obeyed directly, as humbly as possible. All the Court histories and adventures amuse me very much.

The business is all taken down in writing, and translated into English. The trials, examination of the witnesses, sentences of the Judge, &c., all go under the general name of "Decrees," and every day a certain number of copies of these Decrees are brought in for the Judge to examine and verify. I often get hold of them to read, and very curious they are; but the lying and false witnessing are quite horrible. Sometimes the whole case is one great lie supported by innumerable forgeries. The other day a man laid claim to the house and land of another: the claim was well established; there were all the proper documents to show that the estate had been in his possession, witnesses in plenty to swear to the same, and a plausible story as to the manner in which the defendant had cheated him out of it; and, in short, everything to prove him a most ill-used man. But

the defendant had just as good a story, as carefully arranged papers, and as many respectable witnesses on his side; but here and there different little things were allowed to transpire which weakened his cause, and gave the plaintiff rather the best of the story. A—— made me guess how the matter had been decided; and, of course, I supposed that the land had been restored to the poor injured innocence who claimed it. No such thing: A—— says, in the midst of such constant cheating, he is obliged often to judge by the manner and countenance of a witness rather than by his evidence, and in this case it struck him that there was a cunning under look that did not belong to a true man; he therefore set on foot a strict inquiry into the affair, and discovered that the whole was a concerted scheme between the two men; that neither the one nor the other had the property in his possession, nor the slightest claim upon it; and that it belonged altogether to another person, who knew nothing whatever about this lawsuit. The object of the two false claimants was to get a Decree passed in favour of one of them, it did not much signify which: the Court Peons must have seen it executed, and the real owner would have been turned out of his property, while the two cheats divided the spoil.

There seem to be very few cases that are not supported by *some* forgery or false evidence in the course of the trial. Even when the truth is on their side, and would be quite sufficient, they prefer trying to establish their cause by falsehood, though it discredits rather than helps them.

February 16th.—For the last few days we have been occupied with company again. A regiment passed through, and we had to dine all the officers, including a lady; now they are gone. I perceive the officers' ladies are curiously different from the civilians. The civil ladies are generally very quiet, rather languid, speaking in almost a whisper, simply dressed, almost always ladylike and *comme il faut*, not pretty, but pleasant and nice-looking, rather dull, and give one very hard work in pumping for conversation. They talk of "the Governor," "the Presidency," the "Overland," and "girls' schools at home," and have daughters of about thirteen in England for education. The military ladies, on the contrary, are almost always quite young, pretty, noisy, affected, showily dressed, with a great many

ornaments, and chatter incessantly from the moment they enter the house. While they are alone with me after dinner, they talk about suckling their babies, the disadvantages of scandal, "the Officers," and "the Regiment;" and when the gentlemen come into the drawing-room, they invariably flirt with them most furiously.

The military and civilians do not generally get on very well together. There is a great deal of very foolish envy and jealousy between them, and they are often downright ill-bred to each other, though in general the civilians behave much the best of the two. One day an officer who was dining here said to me, "Now I know very well, Mrs. ——, you despise us all from the bottom of your heart; you think no one worth speaking to in reality but the Civil Service. Whatever people may really be, you just class them all as civil and military—civil and military; and you know no other distinction. Is it not so?" I could not resist saying, "No; I sometimes class them as civil and uncivil." He has made no more rude speeches to me since.

February 17*th*.—Yesterday the old Braminee post-office writer came to pay a visit and chat. He had been to a great Heathen feast at some distance—thirty thousand people present. He told us that the Narsapoor Missionaries and Mr. G. were there, preaching and giving away books, and that they said, "What use your feast? *arl* (all) too much nonsense! What for make noise, —tumtums,—washing?—arl that, what for do? pray to God, that *prarper* (proper)!" We asked if the people understood and listened, and if any of them believed the "padre's" words. He said, "Understand, very well;—listen, plenty;—believe, no, sar!" Then he went on to tell us that they could not believe now, no more could he, but that their children's children would all believe; that we were now in the ninth Avatar, which would last sixty years longer; that then there would be "plenty too much great trouble," and everything "more worser" than it had ever been before; that all religion would be destroyed, and this state of confusion would last for some time, but that, within two hundred years from the present time, the tenth Avatar would take place, and Vishnoo would appear to put all in order; that he would not restore the Hindoo religion, but that caste would be done away with for ever, and all people be alike upon the earth,

"just same Europe people tell." Then he went on with their usual story that all religions were alike in their beginning and would be alike in their end, and that all enlightened people believed the same thing, &c., &c.—just the nonsense they always talk; but I thought his tradition very curious.

I have taken a Moonshee to translate for me, and to teach me Gentoo. He is a tolerable translator, but a great booby. He was showing me some different forms of the same letter: I asked on what occasions each was to be employed. He said, "This one, carmon (common) letter, I teach boy;—arther (other) one, sublime letter, I teach hanner (honour) ma'am." Another time I was playing with the baby, and saying, "Talk, baby, talk!" when Moonshee rose from his chair and came to me very slowly and formally, holding his petticoats over his arm. After a solemn salaam, he told me, "I have one subject to inform your honour." —"Well?"—"I shall inform your honour that this baby cannot talk: it is not capable for her to talk until she shall have arrived at two years."—Did you ever know such an owl? They have no notion of anything in the shape of a joke, unless it is against the Collectors and the Board of Revenue. That touches their hearts and tickles their fancies directly.

So many people apply to us for books, that we are going to set up a lending library, to be kept in the school-room, for natives, half-castes, and travelling soldiers who may halt here. We cannot muster many volumes yet, and some of those are contrived by sewing tracts together. Tailor and I have been very busy making elegant covers out of bits of coloured paper. We greatly want some baby lectures on astronomy for our school. I am trying at them, but it is a tough job, because, first of all, I am a dunce myself, and next I have very few astronomical books, and those—such as Mrs. Somerville, Herschel, &c.—not suitable. All the elementary books are translated from English lesson-books, and are altogether out of the comprehension of the natives —not so much *above* them as *different* from them—expressed in terms which they cannot understand, from being completely unlike their own manner of thinking and explaining.

February 22nd.—This is now the Indian spring. The garden is in full flower, and the scent of the orange-blossoms and tube roses quite fills the room as I sit with the windows open;

but it is beginning to grow very hot: the thermometer is at 90° in the middle of the day, but I do not find it so oppressive as at Madras; the air is much fresher and clearer. Dr. Stewart advises me not to remain here after the middle of the month, so on the 16th we are all to go to Samuldavee. A—— will settle baby and me there, and then he must return by himself, I am sorry to say, to his hot Court. We shall probably be obliged to remain on the coast about four months, but he will be able to shut up the Court and come to us for one month, and occasionally at other times from Saturday till Monday.

LETTER THE EIGHTEENTH.

March 8th.

I AM very busy now, translating a story with my little squinny Moonshee. Moonshee chuckles over it, and enters into much conversation about it.

M.—Your honour has in this your handiwork taken much trouble to bring together *arl* things *prarper!*

I.—Because everybody ought to know those things, Moonshee.

M.—Those are from your honour's Shasters.* My people also have Shasters and Vedas; are not those the true words of God?

I.—They are *not* true; they tell to worship idols. Now you know very well, Moonshee, that those idols are only wood and stone; you do not believe them to be really gods.

M.—I know very well—piece of stone—nothing at arl. What enlightened person thinks them to be God?—No Bramin, no Moonshee will think—but idols are of necessity for arl carmon people.

I.—Now you see we can know those Vedas to be lie, because, if they were words of truth, they would not tell you to make lie to anybody, common people or Bramins.

M.—Ah, ha! But if not the words of God, who did make write the Vedas? No man could write, therefore God write.

I.—Some Bramins, a great many years ago, wrote.

M.—No any Bramins; Vedas are written in the Devinagree—the most holy Sanscrit—the language spoken by the planets. What man could write?

I.—*Now* could not write; but formerly the Devinagree was common language: Bramins could write very well.

M.—Will your honour tell me, is not Devinagree the language of the planets?

* Holy books.

Upon this I gave him a touch of astronomy, and told him what astronomers could see with their telescopes, so as to know for certain that the astronomical legends in the Vedas are not true. Then he went off into a metaphysical disquisition on the nature of God, which I would not answer further than that man could know nothing of God but what he is pleased to reveal." Then he wanted to know why God had not taught all men to speak the same language, so that all might profit by each other's knowledge. I told him the history of the Tower of Babel, which he liked very much, except that he was disappointed at my not knowing how many cubits high they had raised it. He had been educated at a Dissenting Mission school, but left it almost as ignorant as he entered it. He thought that the Bible had been written in English, and that that was an argument against it, English being a modern language. He was charmed at the sight of some Hebrew and Greek, which he had never heard of. He supposed that our Saviour had come to England about a hundred years ago, just when the English first came to India; and, when set right upon that, he argued that, if God had meant the Hindoos to receive the Bible, He would have sent some teachers to India when Jesus Christ came into the world. So then I told him about the first preachers, the Black Jews, the Syrian Christians, &c. He said, "Will your honour not be angry if I ask one question, and will honour ma'am tell me that question?" "If I know I will tell, and I will not be angry." "Certainly no any anger upon me?" "Certainly not." "Then I would ask your honour, suppose any Europe lady or gentleman make much wickedness—never repent—never ask pardon of God—never think of Jesus Christ, but die in committing sin; what will become of them?" "They will go to hell." "What! Europe lady or gentleman?" "Certainly." Then he went on to tell me all about the transmigration of souls, which he said was a great advantage in his religion, for that going to hell was "very offensive." Then he told me a long story. "If your honour will listen to me, I shall make you sensible how it consists. One man had ten sons, and to his sons he gave rules. But those sons arl *ispeak* different languages; therefore he allow them take the rules every one in his own language, which may suit him best; is it not so?"

I.—Now, Moonshee, I will tell *you* how it consists. One man had ten sons, and to all he gave rules—*same* rules, understand. Those sons speak different languages, therefore he allowed them to translate the rules each into his own language, but always *same rules.* One son tell, "My father give too many rules; I don't want:" so that son throw away half his father's rules. Another son tell, "Don't like some of these rules; myself I shall make:" so that son change half his father's rules. Another son tell, "I will keep my father's rules; neither add nor take away." Which son best, Moonshee? He answered with his usual "Ah, ah!" and looked very cunning. I tried to persuade him to read the Bible, but he said it was too much trouble. I do not think these natives have the slightest notion of there being any beauty or advantage in *truth.* They think one way is good for them, and one way good for us. They are very fond of metaphysical subtleties, which at first makes one fancy them very acute, but one soon sees that they have no power of perceiving the real state of an argument. They are always caught and pleased with a cavil, when a reason has no effect upon them; but what they like best of all is any illustration or parable. That seems to be their own manner of reasoning. I do not suppose they ever have much real conversation with each other—mere chatter and gossip. They seem to have no pleasure in associating with each other on terms of equality. Everybody has a *tail,* consisting of poor followers, flappers, and flatterers. The head feeds the tail, and the tail flatters the head; and plenty of "soft sawder" seems to be in use. When head walks abroad, tail walks after him at a respectful distance. If head stands still to smoke his cheroot, tail, who has no cheroot, stands still and looks admiringly at him. If head condescends to make an observation, tail crosses his hands, bows, assents, and remarks what a wonderfully wise man head is!

The other day we happened to tell the post-office writer that the officers were coming to dine with us, and that we did not want him to go and peer out all the gossip concerning them, which he had offered to do, like an obliging jackal. "Sar," said he, "very great charity, indeed, sar!" "Charity!" exclaimed I, rather astonished. "Ma'am! too much great charity, indeed, ma'am!—but Master very charitable gentleman; always

give bread to gentlemen passing through. Last Judge, when anybody pass by, Judge too much sick—gentlemen go 'way, Judge too much well again!"

A Government circular is just come to all the Zillah Judges, to inform them that "the Right Honourable the Governor in Council" has been considering the best means of facilitating the re-apprehension of prisoners who have escaped from confinement; and it has occurred to him that it would answer the purpose to make them always wear a dress of some particular colour or material, by which they might be easily identified.—The innocent bird! He must have kept his eyes in his pocket ever since he landed, not to know by this time that the natives strip off their clothes as soon as they are alone, or at work, or running; and, most certainly, runaway prisoners would not remain in full dress merely for the purpose of being identified.

To-day's Gazette brings word that Government have just issued their orders that "*no salutes to idols be discontinued*, but that all respect be paid to the native religions as heretofore." Is not this disgraceful? A fortnight ago, at a Mohammedan festival at Trichinopoly, the European troops—Artillery-men—were kept exposed to the sun for nine hours, firing salutes, and "showing respect" to Mohammed.

The Government lately presented a shawl to a Hindoo idol, and the Government officer, Mr. D., with whom we are acquainted, was ordered to superintend the delivery of it. He does not pretend to be a religious man—a mere commonplace, hunting, card-playing dandy; but even *he* was disgusted at having such an office to perform; so he went with the shawl in his tonjon, and told the Bramins they might come and take it, for that he would not touch it with his own fingers, to present it to a Swamy. At the same place the Swamy was making a progress in its car, and the officiating Bramin came and told Mr. D. that it had stopped at a certain point for want of sufficient offerings; so Mr. D. went to see about it, and found that they had stuck a wedge under the wheel, which prevented its going on. He had the wedge knocked out, and gave orders that Swamy must arrive at his destination without delay, before all the poor offerers were ruined, or the cholera broke out, as generally happens at these horrid feasts, from the concourse of people,

dirt, &c. In consequence of all this, Mr. D. was much blamed and reprehended at Madras, for having caused the feast to be hurried over more quickly than the Bramins liked. The cars are drawn by men, and very often these men are unwilling to leave their work for the service, and the Bramins cannot catch as many as they want; so the Government order the Collector to take unwilling men by force, and *make* them drag the car.

I believe that, if idolatry were merely tolerated and protected, the idol services would fall almost to nothing, from the indifference of the mass of the people; but our Christian Government not only support and encourage it, but force it down the people's throats. They have made a law that a Heathen Sepoy may not be flogged, but a Christian Sepoy may. If a Sepoy turns Christian, he is subject to a punishment which they are pleased to say would degrade a Heathen or a Mohammedan.

March 20th.—We are going to Samuldavee on Friday, and we had a grand giving away of prizes at the school, by way of taking leave. Every boy with a certain number of tickets had a prize, and they took their choice of the articles, according to their proficiency. First boy took first choice, and so on. The favourite goods were English books, particularly Grammars. Next, the tracts with woodcuts, which you sent me. I had had them bound, so that they looked very respectable, and those wretched woodcuts were wonderfully admired. I gave one tract to the butler's "volunteer," a Gomashta, who writes his accounts for him, in hopes "Master" will admire his talents and give him the next vacant post. The Peons admired the tract so much, that they intercepted it by the way, and they sit in a circle by the hour together, pawing and stroking the frontispiece, and Volunteer explaining the meaning to them.

There have been many more applications for admission to the school again, and one learned old Moonshee has sent two sons, which is a great compliment. The boys, in fact, only wish to learn English in hopes of making money by it, obtaining places in Court, &c.; but they have no love of knowledge for its own sake. A—— gave them a 'History of the World' in Gentoo, and desired them to read it, and answer questions from it; but they brought it back, saying they did not want to know anything that was in it, they only wanted to learn "vords." So

then they were reproached with the attainments of parrots, minas, and such-like, till they looked very sheepish, and promised they would "get plenty sense."

We have a young officer staying with us now, who is to keep A—— company while I am on the coast. He is a nice, innocent, good-natured boy, and as tame as can be. He has brought a cat and two kittens with him all the way from Bangalore, upwards of four hundred miles, and in the evenings he brings them into the drawing-room to pay me a visit and drink some milk, and he sits quite contentedly with them crawling up his great knees, and sticking their claws into him, just like Frank and our old cat at home. He has had six jews'-harps sent him by a brother in England, and he performs Scotch jigs upon them by way of "a little music;" and in the morning, when I go to lie down before dinner, he sits with Moonshee, keeping him to his work, and explaining matters to him. I hope he will be a pleasant companion for the "Master," while I am obliged to be away.

A—— has invited one or two other very young officers, but I do not know yet whether they will come or not. Those "boys" are very remiss about answering invitations; sometimes I do not know whether one of them means to accept an invitation or not, till he makes his appearance at the time appointed, bowing and smiling, with a ring and a gold chain, quite unconscious that he has not been the very pink of politeness.

LETTER THE NINETEENTH.

Samuldavee, March 26th.

HERE we are, safely arrived and established for the summer. The baby and I were beginning to be so ill with the heat at Rajahmundry, that A—— brought us away in a hurry, and settled us here with Peons and servants, and is gone back himself this evening. He means to come every Saturday and stay till Monday, unless any particular business should prevent him. This is a most charming place—the thermometer eight degrees lower than at Rajahmundry, and at present a fine sea breeze from eleven in the morning till eleven at night, and a thick cocoa-nut tope between our house and the land-wind, so that I hope we never shall feel it in all its fury. I do not suppose there is a healthier or pleasanter summer place in all this part of India. Its only fault is its extreme loneliness. This is a solitary house on the shore of an estuary; not even a native village or hut near; forty miles from the nearest European station—Masulipatam; and no English people at all within reach, except the two Missionaries at Narsapoor, ten miles off. I have no one ever to speak to, but my own Hindoo servants. I mean to amuse myself with learning Gentoo, and have brought a Moonshee with me. Gentoo is the language of this part of the country, and one of the prettiest of all the dialects, but there is nothing very fine or beautiful in any of them. The idioms are quite disagreeable; they have neither simplicity nor finesse. I believe the old Sanscrit is a very fine language, but it is excessively difficult, and would be of no use to me. The Moonshee I have brought with me is not the little talkative magpie who told me about the language of the planets, but a very slow, sober, solemn gentleman, with a great turn for reading and sententious observations. Whenever I keep him waiting, he reads my books. The other day he got hold of a Church Prayer Book, which he began to read straight through—Dedication,

Calendar, and all. He told me that he perceived it was a very scarce and valuable work, but that he would take great care of it, if my honour would grant him permission to read it at his own house, which of course my honour was very willing to do. He admires it greatly, and says, "Ah! good words! very fine words!"—but he says he thinks a man must have "a very purified mind to be capable of using those prayers." He says he much wishes to read our Shasters, so I am going to give him a Gentoo Bible as soon as I can get one from Madras.

April 2nd.—To-day I have had a specimen of the kind of company I am likely to see at Samuldavee. Three wild monkeys came to take a walk round the house and peep in at the windows: they were the first I had seen, and very fine creatures —what the natives call "*first-caste* monkeys," not little wizen imps like live mummies, such as we see in England, but real handsome wild beasts. They were of a kind of greenish-grey colour, with black faces and long tails, and their coats as sleek as a race-horse's. They were as large as calves, and as slim as greyhounds. They bounded about most beautifully, and at last darted with one spring to the top of a rock ten feet high, and sat there like gentlemen taking the breeze and talking politics.

In the jungle behind our cocoa-nut tope there are clumps of prickly-pear, sixteen or eighteen feet high, and tribes of jackals sitting playing with their young ones on the turf—very pretty graceful creatures, like large foxes. I have found many shells on the beach, but I am afraid they are not good for much. They were, however, all alive, taking their evening walk, when I met them, taking mine. I set some boys to dig in the sand, but they brought me nothing but broken mussels and cockles.

April 23rd.—We are very comfortable here, and the Master pays us his visit once a-week. Moonshee comes every day, and I potter a little at my Gentoo; but I have not learnt much. I do not work very hard, and no Moonshee has any idea of teaching, but I just pick his brains a little by way of amusement. He is a Bramin, and, like all of them, very fond of questioning and discoursing. He has now read my Prayer Book straight through from beginning to end, and with great admiration; but he says the finest words in the book are "Maker of all things visible and invisible;" those, he says, are "very great words

indeed." Now he is reading the Bible. He told me that a learned Bramin came to pay him a visit and to look over his new Bible. The Bramin said that all the words against graven images were "good and very true words," and that it was certainly a "senseless custom" for a man to bow down to a stone; but that still it was necessary to keep images for the Sudras (low-caste people), for fear they should not believe in any God at all. That is their constant argument. They never defend their idols, nor own that they worship them, any more than Roman Catholics will allow that *they* worship the saints. Moonshee says there is one particular tribe of Bramins who keep a sabbath, and it is on the same day as our Sunday; so it seems like a Christian tradition, as the Jews' sabbath was on a Saturday. He thinks it is kept in honour of Kistna, but he says it is only a custom, and not commanded in the Shasters.

April 24th.—In one of my letters I told you about a bad Zemindar who would not pay his debts, and A—— threatened to send a *battalion* against him. Upon this the Zemindar sent a very polite message with a tray-full of oranges, and a request that his honour the Judge would keep much favour upon him, and look upon him as his own son! But his Honour was extremely indignant, and returned the tray of oranges, with an answer, that he would hold no intercourse with him till the debt was paid. The returning a present which may be accepted is the greatest possible affront, and it hurt the Zemindar's feelings so much, that he immediately sent another message to say that, rather than in any way displease Master's honour, and have his oranges refused, he would pay his debt. Master's honour thought he had gained the day, but the cunning old fellow despatched a party of his ragamuffins to make an attack on the Government treasury in the next district, and seize money enough to pay his debts here. However, the thieves were detected and defeated, so there the matter rests for the present, and we do not yet know which will win.

In my tonjon yesterday I passed a large old tree, inhabited by a family of monkeys—father, mother, and children of all ages. Don, A——'s dog, who was with me, was in a perfect fury to get hold of them, sitting upon his hind legs, and whining with agony. The monkeys were in a rage too, but they were very

clever. The old father hunted his wife and children up the tree, on to one of the high branches; and when he had seen them safe where they could only peep out and grin, he came down again himself, and stood at the edge of a dancing bough, chattering, grinning, and evidently trying to provoke Don—taking excellent care, however, to keep out of harm's way himself—and sneering, till poor Don was so wild with fury, that I was obliged to have him tied up and led away.

LETTER THE TWENTIETH.

June 22nd.

I HEAR that the river is come down at Rajahmundry, and I wish that, like Johnny Gilpin, I had "been there to see," for the manner in which these Indian rivers come down is very grand. When I came away it was one bed of sand, except a narrow stream just in the middle.

A—— had made the prisoners dig some channels for the convenience of the neighbourhood, but they had all gradually dried up, and the poor people had to go nearly a mile over the bed of the river to draw water from the middle stream, and the heat and glare from the sand were almost intolerable. But one morning last week he was looking out of the window, and he saw one of his little channels suddenly filled, and the water presently spread as if it was being poured into the channel. In the course of six hours the river was quite full from bank to bank, eighteen feet deep and two miles broad, and rushing along like the Rhone. There will now be no more of the very hot weather. Here, at Samuldavee, there has been no really intolerable heat; but at Rajahmundry A—— had the thermometer at 100° in our drawing-room, notwithstanding watered tatties and every precaution. With us it has not been above 92°, and that only for a few days; generally 86° and a sea-breeze. I find the wind makes much more difference in one's feelings than the heat itself: 90°, with a sea-breeze, is far less oppressive than a much lower temperature with a land-wind.

Mr. and Mrs. Beer (one of the Narsapoor Missionaries and his wife) spent a day with me last week. He said they had been "very dull of late;" that the people seemed to have satisfied their curiosity, and now never came near them; and that they had not seen a single instance of a wish really to know or inquire into the truth—only mere curiosity. That is the great difficulty with these poor natives; they have not the slightest idea of the

value and advantage of truth. No one in England knows the difficulty of making any impression upon them. The best means seems to be education, because false notions of science form one great part of their religion. Every belief of theirs is interwoven with some matter of religion; and if once their scientific absurdities are overthrown, a large portion of their religion goes with them, and there seems more likelihood of shaking their faith in the remainder.

Our school goes on nicely and keeps full. The children learn what we bid them, and read the Bible, and give an account of what they read, just as they might in England—but it makes no impression: they look upon it as a mere English lesson. They know that the Bible is our Shaster, and suppose it to be as good for *us*, as their own Shasters are for *them*. Moonshee reads and studies the Bible, and often brings it to have passages explained. He says he believes all the "good words" against idolatry, but that the worship of any of the superior invisible beings is not idolatry, only the worship of graven images and demons. He was reading the story of Cain, and he supposed that the reprimand to Cain, "If thou doest well, shall it not be accepted," &c., was on account of his following "such a mean trade" as tilling the ground.

I have just been arranging some questions and answers for the school, and setting Moonshee to translate them. They were, of course, the most thorough *a*, *b*, *c* affairs possible; but Moonshee said they were "deep words," and his misunderstood translations were considerably quaint. For instance: "Water is a *fluid*," he translated so as to mean "Water is a *juice*." "Is it a *simple substance*?"—"Is it a *soft concern*?" "The sun is much larger than the earth;"—"Sun is a far greater man than earth:" &c., &c.

July 9th.—We have had some very bad weather for the last week; furious land-wind, very fatiguing and weakening. We were scarcely ever able to leave the house either morning or evening, as the wind lasted all the twenty-four hours. Everything was so dried up, that, when I attempted to walk a few yards towards the beach, the grass crunched under my feet like snow. I have taken a good many beautiful butterflies, and Moonshee often brings me insects. He will not kill them, being

a man of too high caste to take away the life even of a flea; of which the fleas, *con rispetto*, take great advantage, and hop about on his shawls and embroidery in a way that is apt to make me very uneasy. I told him, for fear he should hurt his caste or his conscience, that, if he collected insects for me, I should kill them and send them to Europe, and therefore he had better not bring them if he wished them to be preserved alive; but after a good deal of hesitation he came to the conclusion that it would be no sin in him to connive at taking away life, provided he himself did not commit murder.

I have a good many native visitors here. They like coming to me when A—— is out of the way, in hopes that, when they can discourse to me alone, they will make me believe they are very clever, and that my private influence may persuade "Master" to think the same, and then perhaps he will turn out some one else to give them places. They sit and boast about themselves till they are enough to make anybody sick; and after having given me a catalogue of all their talents and virtues—which are all lies, or ought to be, for very often their boasts are of their own cleverness in cheating and oppressing their countrymen in order to obtain money for Government, squinnying cunningly at me the whole time, to see if I look as if I believe them—they put up their hands like the old knights on the monuments, and whine out, "Missis Honour, please recommend Master keep plenty favour upon me: I too much *clover* man!"

Moonshee asked me to-day whether the Governor of Madras was really the wisest man in England. He supposed that the Governors were always picked out for being the wisest men that could be found in the country.

June 22nd.—The other day some of the villagers came to me to make a complaint that one of our Peons had taken up goods in our name, and never paid for them. Of course, I scolded the Peon. Yesterday he brought me a petition addressed to "Your worshipful Honour," setting forth that it was the poor petitioner's opinion that, "when any gentleman come to this place for cool breeze, it is the *duty* of the villagers to give the gentleman's servants everything they want, and he therefore hopes your charitable honour will look upon him for the future as a most innocent man." See what notions of honesty they have! This

"injured innocence" had received the money from us to pay everybody. But with all their badness, and all their laziness, there is some good in them. If their master or mistress is in distress or difficulty, they do not grudge any trouble or fatigue to help them. Last Saturday I was in a great fright: A—— did not come, as I expected, and I had not heard from him for two days. There is no regular post to this remote place, so we have messengers of our own to carry letters and parcels, and we send each other a note every day to say that all is well; for in a country like this, where all attacks of illness are so frightfully rapid, we could not be easy without hearing from day to day. But on Saturday evening, as he neither came nor sent, I was quite frightened, and thought he must certainly have the cholera and be too ill to write, and that I must go and see after him immediately. Accordingly I despatched messengers to post bearers for me all along the road, bade Moonshee write me a letter every day about the baby, and in the evening I set out in a great bustle for Rajahmundry, attended for some miles by all the inhabitants of the nearest villages, all shouting. I took the cheating Peon with me, and told him that he was to go half-way, and then stop, and send a chance village Peon on with me the other half, thinking twenty-five miles quite enough for a man to run in one night; but he said he would rather go all the fifty miles himself, for that he did not mind being tired, and should not be happy in trusting the Mistress to the care of a strange Peon. However, after I had gone about nine miles, I met the messengers with A——'s letters, which had only been delayed by the very common occurrence of the postmen being lazy;—they were fast asleep by the river-side when I met them: so, as A—— was quite well, and only detained by some unfortunate visitor, I returned home again. The bearers, Peons, and people whom I had scuffled half out of their lives to get ready in time, all laughed very heartily; but I was glad enough that it was only a laughing matter, and laughed myself as they shouted with redoubled vigour all the way home.

LETTER THE TWENTY-FIRST.

Samuldavee, July 10th, 1838.

THERE are large snakes here, seven feet long, and as thick as my arm, not poisonous, but I always have them killed, nevertheless; for they are horrible creatures, and, even if they are not poisonous, no doubt they are something bad: I have no respect for any snakes. But, worse than snakes, scorpions, centipedes, and even land-wind, are the GREEN BUGS. Fancy large flying bugs! they do not bite, but they scent the air for yards around. When there is no wind at night, they fly round and get into one's clothes and hair—horrible! there is nothing I dislike so much in India as those green bugs. The first time I was aware of their disgusting existence, one flew down my shoulders, and I, feeling myself tickled, and not knowing the danger, unwittingly crushed it. I shall never forget the stench as long as I live. The ayah undressed me as quickly as she could, almost without my knowing what she was doing, for I was nearly in a fit. You have no notion of anything so horrible! I call the land-wind, and the green bugs, the "Oriental luxuries."

You ask about the THUGS. They are a class of natives who live entirely by murder; they bring up their children to it, and initiate them by degrees—they feel no shame nor compunction; they strangle their victims and take all their property. They pretend that they look upon their horrid profession as commanded by some particular goddess, as her service; but I do not believe it. I think they mystify people about their religious obligations in order to lessen the horror, and get off when examined. I believe their offerings and sacrifices are intended as expiations, not as propitiations: the worst of these heathens have sufficient light of natural conscience to understand and allow their duty to *man*.

COCANADA, *August 10th*.—Finding the weather cool again, we started from Samuldavee about a fortnight ago, and made a

little tour of five days along the coast in our way hither. It was "plenty hot" though, in some of the places we passed through. We went to one place, Amlapoor, where A—— had to settle a dispute between a Moonsiff, or native Judge, and some of his clerks. The clerks wanted to make out that the Moonsiff had taken bribes and committed other enormities. They came to our bungalow to tell their histories, and A—— said that he must go to their Cutcherry (or office) to examine all the papers, and that he should bring with him *two ears*, and give one ear to the Moonsiff and the other to the clerks. This obliging promise was quite satisfactory; but the result was that the clerks' ear heard nothing but falsehoods, and the poor Moonsiff was honourably acquitted, and the clerks pronounced to be rascals. I was glad of it, because I always thought the Moonsiff a very innocent pains-taking creature, and he has been worried quite thin by his clerks, and would have been dismissed from his post if A—— had not sifted the stories. He came to see me after his trial was over, looking so pleased and so happy that for a minute I did not know him again, he had appeared so careworn a few hours before. I dare say, next time I see him he will be as fat as a porpoise.

We spent one day at a former Dutch settlement, *Nellapilly* and *Yanam*. It was really quite a pleasure to see a place so neat: the poor Dutchmen had planted avenues, made tidy village greens, chopped the prickly-pears into shape, clipped the hedges, built white walls, and altogether changed the look of the country. They had raised their old-fashioned houses quite high above the ground, as if for fear of the Dutch fens, and made little brick walks and terraces in the gardens, with water-channels on each side to drain them! In short, they had contrived with great ingenuity every possible unappropriateness that could be devised.

We paid a pleasant visit of a few days to our friends the L——s, whom we found comfortably established in their Collectorate, and objecting to nothing but the *black bugs*. These are not so horrible as the green ones, but bad enough, and in immense swarms. One very calm night the house was so full of them, that the dinner-table was literally covered with them. We were obliged to have all the servants fanning us with separate fans besides the punkah, and one man to walk round the table

with a dessert spoon and a napkin to take them off our shoulders. Except Mr. S——, who contrived to be hungry, we gave up all idea of eating our dinner; we could not even stay in the house, but sat all the evening on the steps of the verandah, playing the guitar.

Rajahmundry, August 16th.—Here we are at home again; but on our arrival, instead of resting quietly, we found an uninvited visitor established in the house to be entertained for several days—altogether one of the coolest and least ceremonious persons I ever saw. He was lame; so A—— one evening lent him his horse out of good nature, and always afterwards Mr. —— took the horse without asking any leave, and A—— was obliged to walk all the time he was pleased to stay. One day A—— made, in his hearing, an appointment with another person to ride to a particular spot next day: "Oh, no," said our guest, "you can't go to-morrow, for I am going there myself, and I shall want the horse!" When at last, to my great joy, he took himself off, he left, without asking leave, all his luggage in our only spare room, to wait till he should like to come back again—without any invitation!

August 31st.—The present commanding officer here, and his wife, Captain and Mrs. C——, are pleasant people, young and Irish, and well-mannered. *She* is *very* Irish, however—lets her tame goats run in and out of the house as they please, and break all the crockery. I sent her some fruit twice in plates, and both times she sent back the plates broken, with notes to say how shocked and confounded she was, but that "the goats had set their feet in them."

Our school is going on nicely; and while we were at Cocanada A—— taught one of the Collector's assistants there how to set up a school, and supplied him with books; and I hope there will soon be a good one at that station also.

When we came home I found that all the time I was away the poor old sergeant was busy raising flowers for me. He sent me most beautiful balsams and roses. Also the Mooftee sent me a present of a talc fan, in return for which I have sent Mrs. Mooftee some heart pincushions, which I hope she will admire.

We hear that the M——s are going home overland in January.

Everybody is very sorry to lose Sir P——. Even those who do not care for religious matters have found the advantage of having an upright and just man over them.

Here is a story of the encouragement given to idolatry, which I know to be true; it took place about six weeks ago. A Collector happened to inquire the destination of a sum of money he was required to disburse. He found it was for a grand ceremony, performed by the order and at the expense of Government, in honour of a particular idol. On making further inquiries he found that the natives had requested to be allowed to take a part of the ceremony and the expense upon themselves, but Government said No, they would do it all. Besides this, he learned that some years ago this wicked feast was first established: it was afterwards discontinued for ten years without the slightest murmur or symptom of discontent from the natives; and within the last two or three years it has been revived by the Government, and entirely kept up by them.

The Collector represented all this at head-quarters (I saw a copy of his letter), petitioning that the natives might be allowed to conduct their feast without English interference, and showing how utterly gratuitous it was, from the proof that the ceremonies had gone on for ten years without the English having anything to do with the matter; but he was assured that Government thought it would be dangerous and inexpedient to make any alteration, and that the feast must be carried on in behalf of the English, as usual.

September 21*st.*—Have you heard of the Cooly Trade? "Emigration of Hill Coolies to the Mauritius" it is called, and divers other innocent-sounding names. In case you should ever hear anything said in its favour, this is the real state of the case. It is neither more nor less than an East Indian Slave-Trade—just as wicked as its predecessor, the African Slave-Trade. It is encouraged by Lord G——, who ought to have inquired more before he gave his countenance to such horrors. These Coolies are shipped off by thousands from all parts of India to the colonies, instead of Negroes. Twenty-one thousand are said to have been sent from Pondicherry only; for though Pondicherry is a French settlement, the Coolies were shipped for our colonies. Numbers are kidnapped, and all are entrapped and persuaded

under false pretences. They are "as ignorant as dirt," do not even know that they are quitting the Company's dominions, and meanwhile their families are left to starve. There is now danger of a famine, from the large number of cultivators who have been taken away. They are so ill-treated by their new masters that few even live to come back, and those who do bring with them the marks of the same cruelties and floggings that we used to hear of among the slaves. As the importation is legal, of course all the throwings overboard and atrocities of the Middle Passage cannot take place; but there are great horrors from stowing numbers in too small a space on board ship. Many die, and many more have their health ruined. There is a great deal of verbiage in the Government newspapers about the Coolies "carrying their labour to the best market," and so on: but the fact is, these poor creatures are far too ignorant and stupid to have any sense or choice in the matter. Some slave-agent tells them they are to go—and they go: they know nothing about it. A Hindoo does not know how to *make a choice*;—it is an effort of mind quite beyond any but the very highest and most educated among them. Gentlemen's native servants are very superior in sense to those poor wild Coolies; but once or twice I have, quite innocently, puzzled and distressed some of our servants exceedingly, by giving them their choice about some affair that concerned only themselves: they have gone away and pined and cried for two or three hours, or sometimes days, and then come back and begged that "Missis Honour would please make order, for they did not know what to do."

I long to see my kaleidoscopes and all the school rewards you have sent me. A—— has an idea that we might manage to set up a little *Europe shop* in the Rajahmundry bazaar, to be managed by a native who would be paid by us. He thinks they would be so pleased by books, pictures, and conundrums of various sorts, that one might thereby introduce useful things "*di nascosto*;" but I fear it is impracticable, because they are so silly and so suspicious, that they would fancy we were trading and making money by it. We have the two first classes of our school now every Saturday evening at our own house, as A—— finds he can instruct them better by that means. Our schoolmaster has taught them to read and write, but he is not capable

of anything more; so now we send a Moonshee three times a-week to teach them some "sense." They are now busy upon a 'History of the World,' which is very good *learning* for them.

September 26th.—It is now a great native holiday for the *Dussera*, a Hindoo feast. Here is a proof of how much they care about their feasts. There is always a holiday in the Courts for a week during the Dussera, and the Pundit, who is the principal Hindoo in the Court, and a Bramin of very high caste, sent to ask whether he might be excused from taking the holiday, because his work was in arrears, and he did not care for the feast. Of course, it would not be fair to let his underlings lose their holiday because he had been lazy and not done his work; but it shows how little stress they really lay upon these feasts, about which the Government makes so much ado.

The old postmaster Bramin is now come to make salaam, and inform us of an eclipse that will take place next week—a very frightful circumstance; and the people are preparing their drums, &c., "to frighten the giant, for who knows whether he may not eat up the moon entirely?" A—— is trying to explain the matter to him, with the help of oranges and limes for the moon and earth. How charmed he will be to see the astronomical magic lantern!

September 29th.—A—— thinks there is serious danger of a war. The Russians have sent ten thousand men to help the Affghans against us, and we are at war with the Persians already. Sir H. Fane, the Commander-in-Chief in Bengal, says that thirty thousand men are necessary to conquer these combined Russians, Persians, and Affghans, and only five thousand are granted. All the Indian politicians declare that nothing but our obtaining a really sensible, energetic man as Governor-General can possibly save India to us—such a one as the Marquis of Wellesley again. Since I have been in India, and have seen the traces of his wonderful wisdom, I have learnt to think him one of the first of human geniuses.

October 1st.—We have had two visits lately from Mr. S——, the clergyman of L——. He is to come to Rajahmundry once a quarter. He is a good man, but has given offence by his punctiliousness about minor matters, such as *public* baptism, &c.

We have also been favoured with the company of a Mr. and Mrs. G——; she is a bride, and as pretty and silly as any one I ever saw. S—— seems to be the principal topic of conversation in this division just now, so Mrs. G——, like everybody else, began to discuss him, and give her *piccolissimo parere* about him. "I think Mr. S—— is very uncharitable—very much so. He thinks it wrong for Missionaries to preach to the natives." "Does he?" said I, somewhat astounded: "why, I understood that he particularly wished the Missionaries to confine their preaching to the natives, instead of employing themselves among the Europeans!" "Ah!" said Mrs. G——, "very likely that 's it: I know he thinks something wrong—he 's very uncharitable." She discoursed also a good deal on literature and science, chemistry and poetry, in a very innocent way, and I found she was, by way of being "blue." But, you know, ladies who are very *blue* are apt to be rather *green*.

October 5th.—Everybody had a holiday on the day of the eclipse; all the Bramins marched into the river to bathe and sing while it lasted; *such* a clatter they made!—An eclipse is a signal for particular purification. There was an old Bramin here in prison for debt; he would not eat anything for fear of defilement, and was literally starving himself to death. A—— found that he could allow him to live in a separate house guarded by Peons, and therefore removed him out of the jail, and now the poor old creature has taken again to his food. The post-office writer came to have a chat about the matter, as he generally does when there is any such trifle of news. I asked him whether he did not think the Dewan a very foolish man to have run the risk of killing himself rather than eat in a prison.—"Yes," he said, "too much foolish; but that man all same one jungle beast—never been in one Government office, never read the regulations!" They look upon employment in a Government office as the height of human dignity, and strut to and from the Court-house like so many turkey-cocks.

I hope we shall soon have a respite from uninvited company, and be able to ask young Ch——, whom we are both longing to see; but our house is a complete hotel for people we do not care to see, and I know not a greater bore than "Indian hospitality," as it is called by travellers. Some time ago there was

an order given to build a public bungalow at this place; but the Government changed their minds, and desired that none should be built at the *stations*, "as the residents can always receive travellers." This is mean enough, but all of a piece with the rest of their proceedings. In order to save money, Lord W. Bentinck reduced the army and sold the stores; and now there is a war beginning, and not soldiers enough to carry it on. They are trying to raise regiments in a hurry, and find that all the able-bodied men, who ought to be soldiers, have been shipped off as slaves to the Mauritius. The Commanders-in-chief at the three Presidencies are all going home, and the Governors can do nothing without them: India is, in fact, governed by the private secretaries, who are not responsible for the mischief they do, and are often intent only on feathering their own nests and promoting their young relations. Half the experienced men in the service who really understand matters are kept in subordinate situations, and young raw slips placed over their heads, to ride races and try fancies, whilst the country is in the most dangerous condition.

October 10*th*.—Moonshee has been telling me a long story about snakes and giants eating up the moon, to account for the eclipse: upon this he received a lecture about the shadow, and so forth; and he now informs me that he shall "futurely not believe that giant." When the schoolboys came for their examination last Saturday we found that three or four had learnt very well, and all the others nothing at all, for which Moonshee gave most excellent reasons: but upon a little cunning inquiry we discovered that all those who had learnt gave Moonshee a little extra private pay, and that those who paid him nothing were taught in proportion. The next process was, to reprimand Moonshee, which being done, he informed me that he should "*futurely* teach all the boys without *parturition*," meaning—partiality.

Yesterday I had an old Bramin to play the tamboura and sing to me. I was in hopes, if I heard a solo performance, I might be able to make out some of their tunes undrowned by their horribly discordant accompaniments. He sang one tolerably pretty Hindostanee song, but was too stupid to sing it over again, therefore I could not catch it. The national airs of this country

are remarkably ugly—like Spanish boleros, with a profusion of caricature flourishes.

October 21st.—To-day I had the delight of receiving your most welcome packet of letters. You may imagine what raptures I am in at hearing that Frank has gained the T—— scholarship! If I were but strong enough, I think I should dance, just by way of effervescence; as it is, I can only lie on the sofa and grin! I am exceedingly pleased. You are quite right, though, in thinking that you had betrayed his intention of trying for this scholarship. You tried to *un-betray* it afterwards, and make me think there was nothing in your hints,—but in vain; I was too cunning for you! I always knew he was going up for it, and calculated that this very mail would bring me the result.

LETTER THE TWENTY-SECOND.

Rajahmundry, October 31st, 1838.

EVERYTHING goes wrong—the overland post has been due this fortnight—all our letters are detained at Alexandria—everybody in a fume—nobody more so than I. The steamers are sent to make war against the Persians instead of doing their proper work—all the ships going on to China or Calcutta instead of to London—and when I shall be able to send this letter, *chi lo sa?*

The Bishop is arrived at Bangalore, within two hundred miles of Madras, and is taken ill, so that he is detained there; but they say his illness is not dangerous. Every one who has seen him likes him very much. We are all well here, only in a fury for letters. There is a great deal of distress among the natives, owing to the failure of the Monsoon, and a prospect of great scarcity. Poor creatures! they are so screwed by taxes, higher than the land will fairly bear, that they never have a farthing in hand. The natives and some of the European officers want the magistrates to force the sale of grain, and the grain-merchants want to hoard it. Some of the magistrates give way, and sell off all the hoarded grain: the consequence is, that the merchants decamp, there is no seed left for sowing, and what was a scarcity becomes a famine. Other magistrates, A—— for one, will not interfere with the sale of the grain, because they have found, by much experience, that that method answers best; and it stands to reason that the merchants will bring the largest supplies wherever they find the freest sale and the best protection. Captain Kelly, the commanding officer here, wants to have the sale forced; A—— will not allow it, and talks himself hoarse, all to no purpose, in trying to convince him that it does not answer, and that the merchants have as good a right to have their property in grain protected as in anything else. Kelly always ends with "I cannot see *that: I* think they ought to sell it;" and Mrs. Kelly puts in her little word in confirma-

tion, "I think they certainly ought to be made to." She has a great idea of people being "made to." She is considerably affronted because A—— will not fine or imprison the butcher and baker till they give their meat and their bread at the prices she thinks proper. He assures her in vain that he has no power over that class of crimes, and also that in such a small station it is not worth the people's while to serve us at the same prices as in a large town with a certain sale and plenty of competition. She still persists, "Hem! with all that, I am sure it *might* be done." There has been so much discussion about it all, that I quite dread to hear the subject mentioned, for fear of a quarrel, besides the wearisomeness: so now, when they dine here, I have invented having two large dishes of barley-sugar at dessert, which is the time when the arguing always takes place; and the barley-sugar being something new and very nice, it quite answers my purposes, and sweetens matters beautifully. They eat it all up, and are quite good-humoured.

November 6th.—To my greatest joy, the September steamer arrived the day before yesterday, and brought us a packet of letters. I go quite mad when the letters appear, and turn Moonshee out of the house without giving him time to make his salaams. But all the natives seem to understand and sympathise with our love of letters. They have plenty of queer notions about Europe letters, and think they add greatly to our respectability. One day I thought a letter from you had been lost, as it did not appear when I expected it; so I sent for the old post-office writer to ask if he was quite sure there were no more letters, as "Ma'am" wanted another. "Oh!" he said, "too much care arlways I take Ma'am's letters. Five letters this time come Ma'am!—Very high-caste lady indeed!—No any lady in this district so many Europe letters same as Ma'am! —No any lady such high caste!"

I am very glad you know Colonel B——y: he was the cleverest man in India when he was here, and has left no one able to supply his place. You ask how I get the pebbles from our river polished. I keep an old Moorman, with a long white beard, cutting and polishing them all day. He is a most lazy old creature, and will do nothing unless he is teazed. Sometimes he does not bring me a stone for days together; then I

send a Peon to ask whether he is *dead*: Peon brings back word, "Not dead, ma'am—that man 'live." Then I send to know how many more days he means to *sleep*: then they come back grinning and looking very cunning, with a pebble in their hands.

Here is a story for you and the national-school girls, if you can make a moral to it. There was a Moorman Hakeem, or doctor, at Calcutta, very anxious to cure one of his patients. The Moormans ought to know very well that idolatry is forbidden by their Koran, but they are often very ignorant and heathenish. This Hakeem thought it would make matters surer with respect to his patient if he secured the aid of some of the Heathen gods as well as that of Mohammed; so he went to the temple of the idol Punchanund, and promised him a large reward if he would help to cure the man, who was very rich, and had engaged to pay the Hakeem a considerable sum on his recovery. The patient died. The Hakeem went again to the temple and told Punchanund that he did not believe he had any power at all, and that, if he was a god, he must get up directly and eat the fruit and smell the flowers which the Hakeem had brought him out of goodnature, notwithstanding his disappointment. Punchanund, of course, sat still: the Hakeem, in a rage, broke off its head, and was found by the police walking about with the idol's head in his hand. On being asked why he had done it, he said, "What was the use of leaving a head on such a stupid fellow as that, who could not help either himself or me?"

November 26th.—The Bishop is well again, and arrived at Madras. The religious people at Madras are going to present an address to Sir P—— M—— before his departure, to express their respect for his conduct, and regret at losing him, &c., &c.

The country and the Government are in a shocking condition: it seems now to be doubtful whether we shall have a war with Affghanistan or not; plenty of preparations are making, but the Affghans have not decided whether they will attempt to stand against us; I think they would win. The Indian army is in a poor condition, especially the Bengal part of it, which would be sent. The Sepoys say they cannot go into the field without their *hookahs*.

I very much fear I shall never see the letters you sent last.

A ship was wrecked the other day off Cape l'Aguillas—all lives saved, but most of the cargo lost: I am afraid two or three of my letters were in it. As is usual in shipwrecks, it was commanded by a young Captain making his first voyage: those young Captains almost always try some clever experiment, and lose their first ship.

November 19th, 1838.—Hindered till now by divers fellow-creatures. The other day we had a visit from a very intelligent native, a friend of Rammohun Roy's: he came to ask A—— to subscribe to a book he is going to publish. He told us he had three daughters and a son, and that he was determined not to be influenced by the Hindoo prejudices against female education, so he had taught his daughters to read and write their own language, English, and Sanscrit, and that he found they learnt just as well as their brother; but he had met with a great deal of trouble and opposition from his relations on account of his innovation—especially from his wife, who for a long time allowed no peace or quiet in the house. He says the natives much wish to see some of Rammohun Roy's suggestions adopted by the Government, and think them very useful and well adapted to their end. You could tell Mr. G—— this: Rammohun Roy's ideas were laid before Parliament, and Mr. G—— will know what they were. There is great distress in our neighbourhood now, owing to the failure of the Monsoon. Whole gangs of robbers are going about, armed with sticks, waylaying the grain-merchants and breaking open the stores. A—— is raising a subscription to buy grain and give it to those who will *work* for it —every man to have enough for himself, and his wife, and two children; and he intends that the workers shall dig a well, or deepen a tank, or do something of that kind which will be a benefit to the people. We have also sent for a quantity of potatoes, in hopes of introducing their cultivation: the cultivators are willing to try them now, in this time of scarcity, and I hope they may succeed. I am to give the potatoes, and A—— is to give a reward to the man who raises the best crop. Potatoes would be very good to cultivate here, because they require so little water. The tanks are all dried up, and people are beginning to grudge the trouble of drawing water from the wells for their bullocks. One man said to me, "Two pots water,

whole family drink quite 'nough; and two pots water one bullock arl own hisself drink up: too much trouble that bullock!"

A—— is just returned from Samulcottah (the Military station), whither he went on occasion of a public dinner. Major C—— is very much given to drawing, and good-naturedly sent me two portfolios filled with his performances to look at: they are very clever and well done; but, like most amateur drawings, they have every merit except *beauty*. I do not know how it is we all contrive to avoid that!

I am just now deep in the *surface* of geology. Mantell speaks of fine fossils in India, so I sent hunting about for some. One man brought word that he had found in the bed of the river a number of the "*bone-stones*" my honour desired: this put me in great glee; but when I came to see the "bone-stones" myself, they were nothing but common white flints, somewhat the colour and shape of bones.

Our school goes on but slowly, though we work a great deal at it. It requires time and patience to clear out their heads of nonsense. The old English school-books you have sent will be most valuable. We find the only way to teach these natives is by question and answer: they cannot take in anything of a prose, so we compose dialogues for them on what we want them to learn. The Narsapoor Missionaries go on zealously and sensibly, and I hope do the *beginning* of a little good. Bowden and his wife are here just now, that she may be under the Doctor's care during her confinement.

January 9th, 1839.—We had lately a long visit from poor Penny-Whistle. He came to tell us all his trouble on the loss of his wife. He said he was going to make a pilgrimage to Tripetty, a very holy pagoda some hundred miles off, and to give many hundred rupees to the Swamy. It was an excellent opportunity for giving him a Christian exhortation, so A—— discoursed a good deal to him, and he seemed to understand a little, and said they were "words of great wisdom:" but the difficulty of talking to natives is, that, instead of attending, they are all the time on the look-out for any loophole to insinuate some of their absurd provoking compliments, and one can never ascertain whether they really take in what is said to them. I

gave him two of the Gospels bound in red satin with yellow flowers, and he seemed pleased, and promised to read them. Among other questions, he asked *where* our God was, that we could worship Him without making pilgrimages. He complained of being very dull for want of something to do, so A—— advised him to set up a school in his town, and look to his estate, and employ people in cultivating the waste lands, which are all utterly neglected for miles around him.

We are now writing dialogues for the natives—to be printed in parallel columns of English, Tamul, and Teloogoo—on different subjects, just to give them a *soupçon* of sense. Mr. Binning has made us a very good one on Grammar; A—— is *doing* Ancient History; the Doctor is doing Anatomy; I am to do different ones. The school continues full, but does not advance much: the two first classes come to us every Saturday to read St. Luke's Gospel and repeat Scripture questions—I mean, questions and answers on Scripture History, which we prepare and they learn by heart. This they seem to like and enter into; but we are only as far as Abraham yet. If we really get through the Scripture History we mean to publish it, as we think it might be useful.

Baby is very well and very intelligent. Every now and then she learns to pronounce some new word, which she thinks is very clever; but I intend, as much as possible, to prevent her learning the native languages: though it is rather difficult—most English children do learn them, and all sorts of mischief with them, and grow like little Hindoos. If my child were to stay long in the country, it would be worth while to send for an English nurse; but, as it is, I hope to bring her home before it becomes of any consequence, and meanwhile I keep her as much as possible with me. The native "system" of managing a child is to make it cry for everything. If "Missy," as they call her, asks for anything, Ayah is too lazy to give it, but argues, and tries to persuade her to do without it: then Missy whines—Ayah does not care for that, she whines too: then Missy roars—then, whether right or wrong, good or bad, Ayah gives her whatever she wants. She has nothing to do but to roar long enough and loud enough, and she is sure to get her own way—anything may be done by means of naughtiness.

LETTER THE TWENTY-THIRD.

Rajahmundry, January 19th, 1839.

THE famine is decreasing now, but there has been much distress. A—— collected about fifty pounds among the three or four English here, the Court writers, and the Rajahs; and the Government gave him fifty pounds more; with which he has fed daily about two hundred and fifty or three hundred people, giving them grain in payment for their work. The old sergeant gives out the tickets to the labourers, and superintends them, but he is somewhat slow, and cannot make them mind him. One day we asked him how he managed: he said, "Pretty well, sir, along with the men—they are pretty quiet; but the *women*, ma'am!" (turning to me with a very coy look)—"they are dreadful bad to be sure! I can't get on along with them at all!" Next day A—— went himself to see how they got on: there he found the poor sergeant with the tickets tied up in the corner of his pocket-handkerchief, and about fifty able-bodied women, all fighting, pulling, and dragging at him; and as many more shut up in a sort of pen of prickly-pear, fighting, scratching, and tearing each other, till A—— thought there would really be some serious mischief done, and some of the babies in arms killed; but the sergeant took it all very quietly:—"Lawk, sir, never mind 'em! they won't hurt theirselves!" A—— goes now every morning to give the tickets away himself, and there is no trouble at all, but all the fighting ladies as quiet as mice. The women help to work as well as the men, but of course they only do a little of the easy part. They are all repairing the tanks and the roads, and the native subscribers are now much pleased with the plan of making the people work for their food. They are beginning to see the sense of it; but at first they tried hard to persuade A—— to give it away in a sort of scramble to those that cried the loudest, which is the native way of giving charity.

We are just now very busy about a new plan, viz., to set up a

native reading-room in the bazaar. A—— thinks the people would often be induced to come and sit there and read, instead of spending all the day in gossiping and chewing betel in the bazaar. He has consulted one or two of the most sensible of our native visitors, who like the thoughts of it very much, and say it would be sure to succeed. We mean to hire a good room in the middle of the bazaar, have it whitewashed and matted, and ornamented with some of the penny pictures which are coming from you, and which will be great attractions; and keep always there a supply of all the Gentoo books and tracts that are to be had, all the easy English ones we can muster, a Gentoo and an English newspaper. There is a Gentoo newspaper published at Madras, and A—— takes it, in order to please some of the Court servants by lending it to them. It is very quaint: sometimes there are articles translated from the English papers, always the most uninteresting and frivolous that can possibly be selected: for instance, a description of the Queen's bed, with the very unexpected assertion that she always sleeps on a hard mat, with nothing over her! In the last number there was an account of a ball given by the Governor of Madras, to which many of the natives were invited. They say, "the Nabob entered with a grand *suwarree* (attendance) of a hundred guards, and a hundred lanterns all in one line, and appeared like a man of penetration. The English danced together pleasantly after their fashion, shaking each other's hands, and then proceeded to make their supper, when the respectable natives all retired." Of course, the "respectable natives" of caste could not remain to partake of our Pariah food! They always despise us very much for dancing to amuse ourselves; the proper grand thing would be to sit still, solemn and sleepy, smoking, or chewing betel, and have dancing-girls to dance to us.

That poor Mr. B—— I told you about, who was helping us to concoct dialogues, is going home ill. He had set up a native school at Cocanada with forty boys; it was going on very nicely, but I am afraid nobody will keep it up now. A Rajah who called here the other day promised to take it in hand, and pay the master, and keep it up himself; but I am afraid his promises will not come to much. He was rather a clever, intelligent man, and came to tell us of a book he is writing on revenue

and judicial matters. Some of his notions and schemes were very good, and A—— thought they really might be useful; but probably the performance will be so queer and rigmarole that nobody will read it. He wanted A—— to write a public official letter to Government requesting that attention might be paid to the book: I think Government would be rather surprised."

Our Narsapoor Missionaries are now engaged in travelling through the district, preaching as they go along. It is a very good plan for exciting attention, and that is the chief benefit that is to be hoped for at present. These poor natives are a long time before they can even be roused from their apathy: as for their *opposition*, they are scarcely equal to making any—it is like the opposition of dormice. I believe they could sleep through a battle.

March 6th.—The reading-room is established and much approved. The doors are opened before six in the morning, but there are always people waiting outside, ready for the first moment they can get in. Always twenty or thirty at a time sit reading there, and about a hundred come in the course of the day. The wall is hung with divers of your penny pictures, which are much admired, especially that of the Queen on horseback. We have found plenty of suitable books, in English, Hindostanee, Tamul, and Gentoo; and I think it seems to be a very pretty invention, and likely to give great satisfaction.

The case of goods by the 'Argyle' arrived a little while ago, and we immediately selected a batch of rewards to give to our boys. There are sixty-five now in the school, but we only gave grand Europe presents to the twenty-four best, not to make them too cheap; and by way of a slight treat to the younger fry, they came to "point" at the presents, and scramble for *pice*. The penknives were more admired than anything; next the slates. We take a great deal of pains, but they learn very little; however, they just get the beginnings of notions.

The other day a Sunnyassee, or Hindoo devotee, came to pray in the middle of the river, and, being a wonderful saint, a number of people made a subscription of fifty rupees that he might pray for them—*that* being the price he set upon his prayers. The Doctor happened to see the crowd in the middle of the river, and asked a boy what they were doing: the boy said they

were going to be prayed for by a great saint like Jesus Christ. The Doctor asked where he had heard of Jesus Christ. He said at the Feringhees' (Englishmen's) school, and that he thought Jesus Christ was a great saint, and that His prayers for any one would be granted. Miss L——'s idea, which you mention, of translating 'Watts on Prejudices' for the Hindoos, is just a hundred years in advance—they would not understand it. What they want is, 'des Catéchismes de six sous,' like Massillon's little infidel.

At the Translation Committee at Madras, some innocent Missionary sent in a proposal to translate Butler's 'Analogy' into Tamul. One shrewd old German said, very quietly, "Perhaps he will first give us the Tamul word for *Analogy*;" and that was all the notice taken of the proposition.

We lately received a petition, signed by the principal people, chiefly Mussulmans, in several of the surrounding villages, begging us to supply them with books of the same kind as those in our reading-room, mentioning the names of several that they particularly wish to have, and saying that they will thankfully pay for them, if we will only procure them. Therefore we have now a sort of circulating library in the district. We consign a packet of books to the head man in one village, and he passes them on to the rest, and when they are all read, we send out a fresh supply.

* * * * * *

LETTER THE TWENTY-FOURTH.

Samuldavy, March 30th, 1839.

HERE we arrived this morning, and are enjoying ourselves, spreading our sails, and cooling delightfully. Rajahmundry was growing very hot, but this place is charming. Last night it was downright cold, and the colder and more uncomfortable it was the better I liked it. The babies and I shall stay here the next four months, and A—— will come to us once a-week as before, if the Governor does not find it out; and in May he will have a lawful holiday. I had a little fever before I came away, and Henrietta was grown pale and pining; but the sea-breeze has cleared my fever away in this one morning, and I dare say in a few days I shall see a great change in her too. We have built a new room here, which is very comfortable, and we are to pay no rent until we have repaid ourselves the expense of it, after which it is to belong to the landlord. This makes it a good bargain both for him and for us, and it only cost thirty pounds altogether.

I believe there is a Missionary coming to Rajahmundry at last—a Dissenter; but if the Church Mission can do nothing for all this immense district, of course we can only be glad that the Dissenters should take it up. He is a Mr. Johnston, seemingly a very quiet, humble person; and I wish he may come, but it is not yet quite settled.

Before we came away we exhibited the astronomical magic lantern to the schoolboys. We sent for them unexpectedly, on a leisure evening, so all who were not at school were "caught out," and lost the show. They were enchanted with it, and understood it very prettily, considering they would not have been capable a year ago of understanding any one of the slides. They particularly admired the moon: I heard some whispering, "*Oh nulla chendroodoo !*"—"Oh good moon!" whenever it

appeared. Mr. G. thinks our school is come on very nicely, and is much better than any of the others he has seen since he has been away: this pleases us, for we had been uneasy, thinking they learned nothing. One of the schools at which he has been teaching is an endowed school at Masulipatam, with a committee and a great deal of money; but very little really done, though much trouble taken in the committee-room: they think it necessary to write and ask the Archdeacon (of Madras) permission for every book, and he allows of none but the English national-school books, which are quite useless to the natives, so they do not get on at all. Mr. Hamilton is going to have a *Pariah* school at Rajahmundry, by way of a companion to ours, as we do not admit Pariahs.

The "reading-room" also answers very well, and is always full. Mr. H. went to see it one morning early, and found people waiting for the doors to open.

Here is a story for you, but it did not happen lately.—There was a goddess carried in procession to one of the pagodas, and the Collector, as usual, had to supply the money: after the procession had advanced some way, the Bramins came and told the Collector that it had stopped because the goddess would not travel any farther with only twenty bullocks: the Collector gave ten more, and the Swamy went on another hundred yards; when the Bramins came back again and said she was still discontented and wanted more. This put the Collector in a passion: he said she was a "greedy devil," and various other little *politesses;* and if she could not be satisfied with thirty bullocks he would *chop her up*. So he sent his Peons to fetch her out of her car, and ordered them to chop her up on the spot: the Peons were afraid, and ran away: then he sent for the cook-boy, and made him chop her up before his eyes—and the Bramins just took it all quietly and went home. I believe this is quite true; and the moral of it is—that the people would not be so very ready to raise rebellions as is pretended on any deficiency of attention to the Swamies. The Collector was a very passionate man, but rather a favourite with the natives because he did not oppress them in money matters, which they care for much more than for Swamy. I must add, however, that A—— says my story of the Collector chopping up the Swamy happened

twenty years ago; and that no Collector in his senses would do such a thing now.

Our clerical friend, Mr. ——, is always in some scrape about christenings: he refuses to admit any sponsors who are not regular communicants, and consequently many children under his jurisdiction are not christened at all. A little while ago he was absent from his station for three days, and D——, who, is Judge there, took the opportunity to christen, himself, all the children Mr. —— had refused; so when he returned he found it all done and registered, with the obnoxious godfathers and godmothers. Also, Master D—— took upon himself to marry an English soldier to a Heathen woman, together with various other *scappate* of less importance, but very provoking. Poor —— felt himself uncommonly hurt, as he often does, and appealed to the Bishop. He showed us the Bishop's answer, which was really beautiful; condemning all D——'s misdemeanors, and at the same time giving —— such good and wise advice about his own vagaries, and yet so kindly and delicately expressed, and the whole tone of the letter so humble and Christianlike, that it was quite a pattern. All the young hands are quite wild about these new ideas concerning baptism. A—— asked young B——, a slip of eighteen, to stand *proxy* for one of the godfathers at our baby's christening: B—— said he could not possibly do it, because, if he were a proxy, he should feel called upon to remonstrate with the parents concerning their way of bringing up the child. A—— explained that we by no means wished him to be godfather, and asked whether he knew the difference between that and proxy. No, he did not, but still "felt sure it must be wrong." Fancy a young chap like that thinking he *must* know best about education, and that his "remonstrances" would inevitably be wanted! He is a good lad too, only somewhat pragmatical and solemn. H—— did not think it wrong to be proxy, but discoursed considerably on a variety of duties of a godfather, which being quite new to me, I ventured to inquire whether he found them in the Bible or the Prayer Book. "Why, neither," said he, "but I am sure they must be *somewhere!*"

April 16th.—Do you know that Government has abolished the pilgrim-tax? It is a very good step towards leaving off their

encouragement of idolatry. Mr. Hamilton received a letter from a Missionary who lives at one of the "Holy Shrines," giving an account of the last festival since the tax; and the compulsory attendance of the natives to drag the cars has been done away with. That part of his letter is so curious that I will copy it for you.

"I have just returned from a large Heathen festival held at the famous *Beejanuggur*. It is pleasing to find that the Company have remitted the tax this year to visitors, and I hear they have had nothing to do with the usual expenses of decoration of the car, &c. No military were present as is usual; notwithstanding, the attendance was unprecedentedly small: I do not suppose there were above fifteen thousand persons present, when last year there were seventy thousand; the year before, near one hundred thousand; and when Mr. Hands, twenty-five years ago, attended, the usual number was about two hundred thousand. This is a pleasing indication of the decline of idolatry. The scarcity of provisions and water, and the fear of cholera, no doubt kept many away; but the decrease of interest in the superstitions of the country, I hope, a larger number. I do hope that three or four years will shut up the festivities of Beejanuggur for ever. The Anagoondy Rajah brought all his people, and used all his influence; but the large car could only be drawn a few yards on the first day, and, on the next day, instead of taking it to the end of the street, from which, had they conveyed it there, they never could have got it back, they brought it home to its place within about three yards, when, being quite exhausted, they left it there."

April 19*th*.—I have received a message from a Bramin, who sends word that he keeps a school in the village, but has no books, and would be very glad "if Mistress please to give some books to teach the boys." You see that is a very good thing, because we can introduce Christian books instead of the histories of their gods. The misfortune is, there are not above six or eight books published in Gentoo, and those are religious tracts and disquisitions that children cannot possibly understand. Nobody knows how much elementary books for the natives are wanted. There was once a School-book Society, but it has dwindled to nothing; and once there was a sort of Native Col-

lege at Madras for educating Moonshees, and Government was thinking of establishing schools up the country. Several were established; and though they were not Christian schools, they were much better than nothing; but they are all done away with now: there are neither schools nor college. Still, if every civilian up the country were to have a poor little school like ours, it would do something in time; but numbers of them disapprove, as they say, of everything of the kind. Mr. L—— set up a school at Cocanada: he had fifty boys and a capital master, much better than ours; but he was not here when we took ours, and now we do not like to turn ours away, as he does his best. L——'s school was going on very nicely when he was obliged to return to England on sick certificate: he asked the Collector to keep up his school, but the Collector thought the natives were better without education, and refused: so the school is broken up, for which I am very sorry.

The boys in our school take the trouble to copy for themselves all the question-and-answer lessons on Scripture History, &c., which we compose for them. A—— and I write the English, Moonshee translates it, and the boys learn by heart and transcribe both the English and the Gentoo.

A—— and I had been lamenting very much the breaking up of Mr. L——'s school, and if ever we leave Rajahmundry very likely our own will share the same fate: it depends entirely upon our successor. While we were thinking so much on the subject, A—— made me write a letter to one of the Madras newspapers, with the results of our cogitations and calculations; and I will copy it for you, as I know you like to hear all our schemes and plans.

NATIVE EDUCATION.

To the Editor of 'The Spectator.'

SIR,—Your paper is so well known as a willing medium for the communication of any suggestions tending to the benefit of the native population, that I venture to request the insertion of a few remarks upon a plan for the more general diffusion of native education. At present all attempts for the improvement of the natives of this Presidency are confined to private, I might almost say to individual, exertions, which of course are capable of but very partial success. What is

required is national education, a boon far exceeding the limited means of a few individuals to bestow. Government only can confer it; but government can, and ought, I doubt not that there exists in the mind of our rulers the wish to improve by education the condition of their native subjects, if it could be accomplished without risk to our dominion, or too heavy an expenditure of public money.

The "auld warld" prejudice of "risk to our dominion" is, I suppose, exploded amongst all who are really acquainted with the native character. It still holds its sway among those whose knowledge of India is limited to the Presidency, and whose native acquaintance extends only to a few writers in government offices; but really experienced Europeans, who have been long *in* the country and *up* the country—who are conversant with the native languages, customs, habits of thought, wishes, and prejudices—know, beyond the possibility of doubt or mistake, how eager the natives are for education, and how grateful for its being in any way facilitated. A European in the provinces has but to open a school of any description in his district, and it is immediately filled beyond the power of one master to superintend. Even with regard to the books used, it is altogether a *presidency prejudice* that the natives are averse to being taught from books of our selecting. They never even consider the matter, but receive, without an idea of hesitating, whatever we may choose to direct. Their difficulties and objections have, I fully believe, been mainly elicited and encouraged by Europeans themselves. I can confidently appeal, for the accuracy of these statements, to any and every European who has himself fairly tried the establishment of native schools, in which truth should be taught, whether on religious subjects or on matters of general information.

Among some persons who are favourable in a general way to the establishment of schools, there still prevails the strange fallacy that we may venture to teach the natives truth on subjects of science, history, &c., but that we must use their own religious books in our schools, and, in fact, teach nothing but falsehood on matters connected with religion. Such arguers forget, or do not know, that what is physical science with us is religious doctrine with the Hindoos. We cannot teach them the most common known fact—such, for instance, as that the earth is suspended in space, instead of being perched upon an elephant, or that an eclipse is caused by a shadow instead of a snake—without overturning two or three dozen of their religious tenets: therefore, if we are to teach them nothing that is contrary to their own notions of religion, we must just leave them where they are on all other subjects; which procedure, or rather non-procedure, I believe few persons are quite prepared to advocate.

The expense of Government national education is, I conceive, greatly over-calculated, or rather over-estimated, for it is probably not calculated at all. A valuable and comprehensive Government general education might be given at a very moderate outlay, by the following plan.

Let there be four schools at Madras, one of which should be considered the central or model school; one at the principal station of every Zillah, and one in every Talook;* all, of course, free, unless it should be thought desirable to establish some payment at the Presidency central school, which might be rendered and considered superior to the rest, and would be chiefly attended by boys of the higher and richer classes. At the Presidency and station schools English should be taught, and a good substantial education given. In the Talook schools English would be unnecessary, but education should be carried on in the native languages to whatever extent the books published in those languages render possible. The Madras schools should be under the superintendence and direction of a Board of Education, and the provincial schools under that of the principal European residents at their respective stations. There should be a certain number of books authorized by government, and a fixed general plan, upon which all the schools should be conducted; but it appears to me expedient not to lay unnecessary restrictions upon the European superintendents' occasionally introducing additional books or trifling modifications of the system, according to their judgment. If they be too much fettered and restricted, they will naturally take less interest in the work, and their superintendence will be proportionably inefficient.

Now, let us calculate the expense. I believe one lac of rupees† per annum would amply cover the whole. There are twenty districts in the Madras Presidency, and altogether about two hundred and forty Talooks. Native teachers up the country may be engaged at from five to ten rupees per month. Houses in the villages may be bought, built, or hired for a few rupees per annum; and certainly the whole cost of the Talook schools, including cadjan, paper, pens, books, and sundries, need never exceed twenty rupees per month. This may even, in most cases, be reduced by the schoolmaster being paid by the grant of a small piece of land, free of taxes; and this land might be considered as an endowment, and always be the property of the schoolmaster for the time being. The expense of the station schools, where English should be taught, would be about fifty rupees per month; of the Madras three minor schools, one hundred and fifty rupees per month; and of the superior one, to which the scholars might contribute, three hundred and fifty rupees per month.

* A smaller division of the district. † Ten thousand pounds.

Now, let us sum up the whole:—

	Rupees.
240 schools, at 20 rupees per month . .	4800
40, viz., 2 in each district—one under the collector and one under the Judge, at 50 rupees per month	2000
3 at Madras, at 150 rupees per month . .	450
1 do., at 350 rupees per month . .	350
Total . . .	7600

or ninety-one thousand two hundred rupees per annum; and allowing the overplus for sundries and unforeseen expenses, I think there can be no doubt that education might be diffused over the Madras Presidency for the sum of one hundred thousand rupees per annum, even allowing for all being paid in hard money, which need not be the case if the system were adopted of attaching a piece of land to the situation of schoolmaster.

I am, Sir,

Yours obediently,

MATTER OF FACT.

May 7th.—The scarcity is over now. Government gave a great deal of money to spend among the poor. Our Collector gave A—— fifty pounds of it, all of which he laid out in grain for the workers, both men and women. They have made several miles of beautiful high road, deepened tanks, and dug a well—the well is a very great acquisition to this place; you may suppose, in such a climate, how glad the people always are of additional water. A—— was so pleased with his well that he sent all the way to it, a mile off, for water to christen our new baby!

SAMULDAVY, *May 10th.*—The Bombay monsoon has just set in, so there will probably be the same delay in the steamers as there was last year; wherefore I intend this letter to go by an old ship. It is very hot now—land-wind all day—very bad. However, I do not suppose it will last many days; and then, whatever sea-breeze there is we shall have in full perfection.

In your last you ask how our potato plan answered during the famine: we were unable even to try it, for, owing to the difficulties of carriage in India, the potatoes did not arrive at Rajahmundry till the season for planting them was completely over. There were contrary winds, which prevented ships from

coming quickly, and there are no roads in our district—nor, indeed, scarcely anywhere to the north of Madras. People say that, if Government would spend money sufficient to make good roads, it would be repaid over and over again in the increased trade and traffic; but there are very few who care about the matter, so it dawdles on. Rich people travel four miles an hour on men's shoulders; poor people walk; and luggage waits for an opportunity by sea.

May 14*th*.—We are going to set up a school at Samuldavy for Gentoo only; we could not manage an English school here. The Missionary Beer came the other day, dined with me, and went to preach in the topes. A Bramin brought the tracts I had given, and asked Beer to explain them, as he said they were very fine, but nobody could understand them. He requested Beer to establish a school here, and said there would be plenty of boys glad to attend. So we are going to set one up, and Beer is to come now and then from Narsapoor to superintend it when we are at Rajahmundry. The head man of the village has offered to build a school-house himself;—you know their houses are only sheds.

We have just had a long visit from a young Rajah, whose ambition is to engraft the character of an English dandy on that of a native don; and the result is, a sort of king of twelfth-cake. He goes about in an English palanquin with native penny flags by its side; and adds to his national muslin gown, and gold Rajah's cap, a pair of satin trousers, and a green satin waistcoat, embroidered with pearls. He wanted to show A—— some papers, so one of his attendants brought in an English leather writing-desk, and Twelfth-Cake proceeded to twiddle at the lock, turning the key round the wrong way, clicking the bolt, and fumbling and fidgeting for full five minutes before he could get it open. By and by he produced an enormous silver watch, like a prize-turnip, with six chains, and begged to set it by our watches. He made a great fuss with the seal and key, but contrived it at last, and sat down again, looking as proud as an infant schoolboy—and almost as clever. He professed a wish to make his name famous, so A—— advised him to educate the people in his Zemindary, and especially to be the first to establish a girls' school. He promised that he would set up both a girls'

and a boys' school; and looked at spelling-books, asked directions about building a school-house, and really seemed in earnest. I wish he may keep in the same mind, for he is a person of sufficient consequence to make the innovation, and to carry it through; but I fear it will all end in buying shaving-glasses and penny prints to stick up in his house.

Our last papers bring an account of a society in England for protecting the natives of India, with a very clever and true speech from a Mr. Thompson—who is he? He puts a few tigers and boa constrictors into his speech, just to keep up attention, I suppose; but it is a capital speech; and his accounts of the shameful taxation, &c., &c., are not in the least exaggerated.

The troops have been short of food and water, owing to the bad arrangements of the Commissariat, and altogether the war is said to be grievously ill-managed.

There is now an opportunity for sending letters *viâ* Beyrout, so I shall despatch this, as there is no ship now in the roads; but ten to one the Arabs or their dromedaries will eat up my letter.

"No more news to report, but I beg always to keep much regard upon me;—excuse me." That is the proper Native manner of ending a letter politely.

LETTER THE TWENTY-FIFTH.

Samuldavy, June 10th, 1839.

THE day before yesterday was Etta's birth day—two years old; so we had a feast in her honour. Feasts are cheap enough among these poor creatures; ours cost a guinea and a half, and fed five hundred people. We gave them rice, which is equivalent to roast beef and plum-pudding in England. They live on a cheaper sort of grain; and many of them cannot even get that, but live on such herbs and roots as they can pick up.

One cannot cook their dinners for them, and see them eat it, as one would at an English feast; but each person had a portion given to him enough for two meals, and took it home. They all sat down near the house, in rows; and Master, and servants, and Peons, measured out the rice, while Etta and I sat and looked on; but *she* soon grew tired of it. I noticed one old squinny man, with a long white beard, who sat a great way off from the rest, very solemn and dignified; a most grand grub, with his old wife at a respectable distance behind him. We found he was a decayed Rajah, who was thankful to come and receive his share of rice with the beggars! They were all very much pleased with their feast, and next morning many of them came back, to pick up, grain by grain, what little had been scattered on the ground in measuring it out.

A—— has established a school here, at Samuldavy; and the schoolmaster is willing to teach with our books, so he and his boys have begun with St. Matthew. They read, transcribe, and learn it by heart, and come once a-week to A—— to be examined; the greatest difficulty in schools is, the want of school-books in the native languages.

A little while ago two young Parsees were baptized at Bombay, and there is every reason to suppose they were real converts: their countrymen were furious, and assembled in crowds around them, as they left the church, using most violent

menaces; and there were great apprehensions of a serious uproar, but the two young Christians were rescued. The Government have taken measures to protect them and keep the peace, and all is quiet again. I believe it never was anything more than the bluster of a mob, but the poor boys might have been hurt.

* * * * * *

There is just a chance of a move for us soon: two appointments are vacant, to either of which A—— has the first claim: —*Sta a vedere.*

What you say about Governors giving appointments, and people fitting themselves for them afterwards, is very true in England, but it is not the case here. There is a regular rule, established by Act of Parliament, that people of a certain standing are entitled to certain appointments, and the Governor has no right to act contrary to it. He may very well choose among those of the *requisite standing*, and give the appointment to whichever may be his favourite; but he has no right to make "the lag of the school captain." *That* is the innovation complained of here: the natives say, "Lord E—— is fond of doing justice, but does not know how."

MASULIPATAM, *July 4th.*—"A change came o'er the spirit of my dream!" I *now* look upon Lord E—— as a most excellent Governor, and W—— E—— as an admirable Private Secretary. A great many things have happened since I wrote last. A—— is appointed "Acting First Judge of Circuit in the Centre Division," and with every prospect of being confirmed permanently, either as First or Second Judge, at the end of the year; the real holder of the appointment being expected to go home in January. It is not *quite* certain that we shall remain there, but very probable; and if we do, we can have nothing more to wish. It is a most capital appointment—high rank, high pay, good climate, and pretty country; at all events, we shall never return to Rajahmundry, and are now *en route* to our new station. The only drawback is, that A—— is obliged to go on circuit directly, and to begin by two very hot places, Cuddapah and Bellary, to which he does not like to take the babies and me. We are therefore to stay at Madras with his brother, till he has finished all the Cuddapah and Bellary business; then we shall join him, and go the rest of the circuit with him, to Chingleput

and Cuddalore, which are both of them cool and pleasant. The name of the place we are to live at when stationary is Chittoor. It is said to be healthy and pretty, with fine gardens and plenty of grapes; hot in summer; but there is a beautiful place, called Palmanair, within twenty miles of it, very high and quite cool—a most delightful climate. We shall also be within two hundred miles of the Neilgherries, so we *can* go thither if necessary, and within one hundred and twenty miles of Cuddalore, a good sea-coast.

We are both of us exceedingly pleased, and "quite content."

July 6th.—We are now fairly on our road.

Besides all our own attendants, in number a hundred and fifty, there are divers "camp followers," such as Amah's husband, Ayah's grub, &c., &c. We proceed, on an average, about twenty-five miles a-night, and rest every day, and on Sunday night, and any other night if we are fatigued. Masulipatam was an ugly place; a swamp, two miles broad, between the town and the sea; nothing to be seen but wide sandy roads, with prickly-pear hedges, enclosing black-looking Palmyra-trees, and red-tiled houses peeping (no, not *peeping*, they are not coquette enough for that—*staring*) out from among them; altogether, a most *vapid* sort of place. The Twelfth-cake Rajah paid us a visit there, to ask all particulars about our school, as he thinks of keeping it up. We had plenty of curious farewell letters from the natives at Rajahmundry; one of them says "he depends entirely upon the protection of A——'s sublime feet, and Mistress Mama!"

RAMIAHPATAM, *July 15th.*—We have been halting here for two or three days, and were met by the best of all company, viz., nearly a dozen English letters brought by the two steamers of April and May, which arrived within three days of each other.

MADRAS, *July 31st.*—We arrived here, babies and I, on the 23rd, and A —— on the same day at his destination, Cuddapah. He was able to come with us to within two nights' run of Madras; and we had servants and Peons, and made the rest of our journey without any difficulty. We are living about six or seven miles from Madras, on the very beach, and enjoy the sea-air much: this situation is cooler and drier than Samuldavy.

Miss T—— is very busy now with a school for half-caste

young ladies, which seems likely to be very useful. Those half-caste girls are in the depths of ignorance, indolence, and worthlessness, and utterly neglected; they have no ideas but of dress and making love—one girl brought forty gowns to school! Our schoolmaster's sister at Rajahmundry (who was a half-caste) came very seldom to church; but, when she did, she used to be dressed in white shoes, gold chains, earrings, two or three brooches, and all such rubbish.

The poor Female Orphan Asylum is as bad as ever: Lady N——, the present Commander-in-Chief's lady, takes an interest in it, and is very sensible in her propositions, such as the teaching them washing, plain work, &c., &c., but the other ladies do not co-operate with her. If I come to live at Madras, I do not think I shall be likely to take a part in it, because A—— has a great objection to the institution itself, though he would let me help if I wished to do so. But it is very bad:—professedly for orphans of European soldiers, while scarcely any of them really are orphans; and the half-caste young left-handed ladies look down upon the poor little honestly-born Europeans, and boast of being "gentlemen's children;" and they go out visiting their relatives without shame or ceremony.

There is always something doing in the way of schools, and certainly an increasing desire among the natives for instruction, and an increasing willingness to receive our books. Towards the south they are more bigoted, and their bigotry is greatly encouraged by timid or ungodly Europeans, who really put objections into their heads; but at Rajahmundry, where they had never heard of hesitations and difficulties, we used to receive applications for books from distant villages, and especially for any portions of Scripture; and the people used to sit in our reading-room for hours, copying our books on their own little cadjan-leaves. It is very remarkable that here, at Madras, people are declining to help the schools in which the Bible is taught, under the old pretence of its being "a dangerous interference with Native feelings," &c.; while, not two streets from the English school, which is dwindling away for want of support, there is a common native Braminee school, in which the Bramin master uses the Bible as a school-book, of his own accord, because he happens to like it; and no idea of difficulty enters his

mind or those of his scholars, though they are all Heathens of a high and prejudiced caste. The Missionaries publish many tracts, of which some are very good, but the greater number are not sufficiently simple, and the natives cannot understand them; and the tracts which come from England are altogether *un-Indian*, and unfit to translate. We want an Indian Hannah More.

I wish I could tell you anything satisfactory about the Tanjore Mission; there is much talk of pruning and purifying it. The church at Tinnevelly will very soon be begun; the plan and site are settled, and all is in progress.

You ask what news I can give you of the "caste question." It is all as undecided as ever. People, even religious people, take such very different views of the matter, that the discussions are never ended. A——, and his brother, and many others, look upon caste as a mixed usage, partly civil and partly religious; and they think it will only be broken down by education, and that many of the native Christians who still adhere to it are among the most satisfactory of the converts; but they think that those who do so should only be employed as schoolmasters or catechists, and not be considered fit for *Ordination*. The Bishop, however, looks upon caste as entirely a distinction of rank, and has lately ordained a native Christian who will not give it up;—others insist upon its being altogether a religious distinction, and will not even acknowledge as Christians those who do not renounce it. Mr. T—— was wishing lately to have a series of meetings for freely discussing the subject—the principal native Christians to take part in it, besides the English gentlemen who differ so much in their views. I, in my ignorance, thought it a very pretty plan and likely to be useful; but the wiser heads thought it would do no good, and I believe it is given up.

August 9th.—A—— is still on duty at Cuddapah, a place noted for fever, which can only be kept off by violent exercise. This *he* is able to take, so that his health does not suffer: he tells me he is quite well, notwithstanding very hard work. He is employed on criminal trials, most of them for life or death; and he says the incessant falsehood to which he is obliged to listen is most painful and wearing,—witnesses by scores coming

forward to swear away the life of another, and often the only motive some petty spite,—and no shame or disgrace felt, even when detected! Certainly, the first characteristic of Heathenism is *lying!* A—— has met with a good painstaking Dissenting Missionary there—a Mr. Howell, whom he is helping in his books, schools, &c., &c. Old civilians, like him and J——, generally know much more of the people, and the languages and customs, than the Missionaries do, and can be of great use to them.

Have you heard yet in England of the horrors that took place at the funeral of that wretched old RUNJEET SINGH? *Four* wives and *seven* slave-girls were burnt with him; and not a word even of remonstrance from the British Government! J—— says there cannot be a doubt that a word of disapprobation from the British Resident would have stopped it at once, for the whole power of the Punjaub depends on our will, and they profess to follow our wishes in everything. Is it not shocking? The four Ranees burnt themselves at their own desire, from pride of family and caste; but the poor slave-girls could have had no such motives, and must have been burnt by the wretches around them. One Grandee *man* pretended he meant to burn himself too, and could scarcely be persuaded against it; but I believe his was all sham: he knew very well they would not let him, because he was useful to the country. When poor old Runjeet Singh was dying, he gave away in charities and offerings to the Bramins, in order to propitiate the gods, treasure worth a million sterling. He was enormously rich, having never hesitated to steal anything he could lay his hands on. He wanted to give the immense diamond he stole from Shah Soojah, but his courtiers persuaded him not.

Here is another disgraceful story of English ungodliness. When Shah Soojah arrived at his capital, Candahar, he and all his Mussulmans went directly to pay their devotions to a rag of Mohammed's shirt, which is kept there as a precious relic. Of course, all the Mussulmans had a right to do so, and no one would think of preventing them; but think of *our Envoy* and the British troops and authorities all accompanying him in state on such an errand! I could scarcely believe it, but it is really true.

August 14*th*.—Preparations are making for a Burmese war, and the Indian newspapers are full of Colonel Burney's wisdom, and wishing they had followed his advice long ago. There has been a "*petite drôlerie*" in the way of treason, headed by the Nizam's brother, but it was found out and stopped long before it came to anything. The old experienced hands quiz it like the "*petits spectacles*" in Paris, but some of the younger Collectors, who were not accustomed to such matters, were rather frightened, and one Collectress told me very solemnly that she understood it had been distinctly announced in the mosques that all the English ladies were to be seized and made slaves of. If you hear any frightful stories, *non pensi*, for it is all fudge. There is another little Rajah trying at a little rebellion fifty miles from the place at which A—— now is; and a couple of regiments are sent to settle his mind. J—— says as soon as he sees the red-coats and Sepoys he will give in; but, poor man! I am rather sorry for him—he has been four or five years collecting arms and ammunition and concocting his little rebellion, and of course his property will be confiscated, and his independent kingdom, such as it is, done away—and, after all, we shall only have "*conquered a green blight*," like Frank when he was a little boy.

I am very glad those insects I sent were so curious, and that you gave the new specimens to the British Museum. No doubt I shall be able to send you plenty more: I do not at all recollect which they were, but in future I will keep numbered duplicates, that I may learn their names. Pray, ask Mr. Samouelle what names were given to the five new species, and let me know.

I really believe the Madras ladies spend all their time in writing notes—"*chits*," as they are called. I do not know ten people now, and yet there never passes a day without my having one or two "chits" to answer:—what with writing them, composing them, finding my penknife, mending my pen, hunting for proper note-paper, which is always hidden in some scribbled foolscap beginnings of tracts, or such-like, all my morning is hindered;—and their chits are generally only to say "how sorry they are they have not been able to call lately, that I must have wondered at it, and *thought*," &c., &c. Now, I never

think about it,—"*les absens*," &c.,—and I would always rather they did not call, because I must sit all day with my hair dressed and my best clothes on, waiting for them; and remember the thermometer is at 92°. I am going to-morrow to Mrs. W—— E——. I have not been able to call on her yet, because we live so far off that I quite dread going out for a *morning* visit according to this horrid Madras fashion. If I see her I shall say that I cannot come in the morning, and beg her to come to me in the evening; but for the first visit there is no help:—just now the weather is cloudy, so I shall take advantage of it before it clears up.

LETTER THE TWENTY-SIXTH.

Madras, September 24th, 1839.

HERE is the steamer going, and almost gone, and my letter for it not begun, though I have a whole steamer-load of things to say, and scarcely know where to begin; but I have been hindered by an attack of Indian fever, and the baby also has been ill, and the doctors talk very seriously of the desirableness of my sending her home. That is the grand Indian sorrow—the necessity of parting with one's children. However, she is still so young that we hope change of air may possibly be sufficient for her; and therefore A—— will fetch us, and leave us at Bangalore, a cool place in the table-land above the ghauts, while he continues his circuit to Bellary, which he thinks too hot for us.

September 30th.—I have been paying a round of visits to all my Madras acquaintances: they seem just in the same state in which I left them, with nothing in this world to do. You can scarcely imagine such a life of inanity. A thorough Madras lady, in the course of the day, goes about a good deal to shops and auctions; buys a great many things she does not want, without inquiring the price; has plenty of books, but seldom reads—it is too hot, or she has not time—*liking to "have her time her own,"* I suppose, like old Lady Q——; receives a number of morning visitors; takes up a little worsted work; goes to tiffin with Mrs. C., unless Miss D. comes to tiffin with her; and writes some dozen of "*chits.*" Every inquiry after an acquaintance must be made in writing, as the servants can never understand or deliver a message, and would turn every "politesse" into an insult. These incessant *chits* are an immense trouble and interruption; but the ladies seem to like them, and sit at their desks with more zeal and perseverance than their husbands in their cutcherries. But when it comes to any really interesting occupation, it is pitiable to see the torpor of every

faculty—worse than torpor: their minds seem to evaporate under this Indian sun, never to be condensed or concentrated again. The seven-years' sleep of the Beauty in the fairy-tale was nothing to the seven-years' lethargy of a beauty's residence in Madras, for the fairy lady awoke to her former energies, which I should think they never can.

Chittoor, October 8th.—Here we are on our travels again in our way to Bangalore. This Chittoor is a very pretty place, with beautiful views all around, but the houses and gardens are so choked up with trees, that we can see nothing—I should like to cut down half of them. Our road lies through the most picturesque country I have yet seen in India, and I enjoy the scenery in the evenings and early mornings when I am not asleep. We are obliged to outrun all the servants, except the ayahs, who travel in palanquins like ourselves; so we manage rather, as Mr. Wilberforce used to say, "in the wild-beast way" in the daytime, but very comfortably notwithstanding. We have a towel for a table-cloth, plantain-leaves when dishes are not forthcoming, and we put the palanquin-cushions on the floor for sofas. Travelling by night, lying down in a palanquin, is much less fatiguing to me than sitting upright all day in an English carriage.

Bangalore, October 12th.—We arrived here yesterday safe and well, after a *pretty considerable* journey—seven nights travelling, with a rest of two days and nights half-way. We always stop on Sundays, but last Sunday night our rest did not do us much good, for in the middle of the night another travelling lady arrived at the bungalow. We had spread ourselves over all the rooms, thinking nobody else was likely to come at that time, and were very comfortably asleep, when I had to rise and scuffle my things out into the other half of the building, through the verandah, in a heavy rain, which was not at all pleasant; after which, some thieves came and ran away with a bundle of the bearers' clothes, so they were making an uproar, howling and yelling the whole night.

October 16th.—I am charmed with Bangalore, and hope it will do us all a great deal of good. The climate at this time of the year is delightful, equal to any in Europe. For the first two or three days there was a good deal of fog, but it has now cleared away, and all is so cool, clear, and bright, that it is quite a plea-

sure to feel oneself breathing. The early mornings especially are as pleasant as anything I can imagine: they have all the sweetness and freshness of an English summer. The air smells of hay and flowers, instead of ditches, dust, fried oil, curry, and onions, which are the *best* of the Madras smells. There are superb dahlias growing in the gardens, and to-day I saw a real staring full-blown hollyhock, which was like meeting an old friend from England, instead of the tuberoses, pomegranates, &c., I have been accustomed to see for the last two years. We have apples, pears, and peaches, and I really should know them one from the other, though it must be confessed there is a considerable family likeness, strongly reminding us of a potato; still they look like English fruit: and the boys bring baskets of raspberries for sale, which are very like blackberries indeed. The English children are quite fat and rosy, and wear shoes and stockings.

There are fire-places in most of the houses, and no punkahs in any of them. It is altogether very pleasant, but a queer place—a sort of cross-breed between the watering-places of every country in the world. Ladies going about dressed to every pitch of distraction they can invent, with long curls which the heat would not allow for an hour elsewhere, and warm close bonnets with flowers hanging in and out of them like queens of the May; black niggers, naked or not, as suits their taste; an English church, a Heathen pagoda, botanical garden, public ball-rooms, Dissenting meeting-house, circulating library, English shops, and Parsee merchants, all within sight of each other; elephants and horses walking together in pleasant company over a great green plain in front of our house, where the soldiers exercise; European soldiers and Sepoys meeting at every step; an evening promenade, where people take good brisk walks at an English pace, and chirp like English sparrows, while a band of blackies play "God save the Queen" and call it the "General Salute." There is a fine old fort here—Tippoo's stronghold; a most curious place, adjoining the old native town, surrounded with mud walls *to be strong!* The Pettah it is called. The English ladies told me this Pettah was "a horrid place—quite native!" and advised me never to go into it; so I went next day, of course, and found it most curious—really "*quite native.*" It is

crammed with inhabitants, and they bustle and hum like bees in a beehive. At first I thought my bearers would scarcely be able to make their way through the crowd of men, women, children, and monkeys, which thronged the street. The ground was covered with shops all spread out in the dirt; the monkeys were scrambling about in all directions, jumping, chattering, and climbing all over the roofs of the houses, and up and down the door-posts—hundreds of them; the children quarrelling, screaming, laughing, and rolling in the dust—hundreds of *them* too—in good imitation of the monkeys; the men smoking, quarrelling, chatting, and bargaining; the women covered with jewels, gossiping at their doors, with screams at each other that set my teeth on edge, and one or two that were very industrious, painting their door-steps instead of sweeping them; and native music to crown the whole. Such confusion was never seen! Landing at Naples is nothing to it. As I came out of the gate I met some young Moorish dandies on horseback; one of them was evidently a "crack rider," and began to show off—as great a fool as Count P——. He reined up his ragged horse, facing me and dancing about till I had passed; then he dashed past me at full gallop, wheeled round and charged my tonjon, bending down to his saddle-bow, and pretending to throw a lance, showing his teeth, and uttering a loud quack! That quack was really too killing. I am busy now making a drawing of a very uncommon pagoda inside the fort. It is a mixture of Hindoo and Moorish architecture, very grotesque and curious indeed. I perceive there are regular styles and orders in the Hindoo architecture. Wild and confused as it seems, it is as determinate in its way as Grecian or Gothic. A—— thinks it is all derived from Jewish or Egyptian traditions, and there is as much of *corruption* as of *invention* in their idolatry. Many of the stories in their mythology are most curiously like the Talmud, and one sees numbers of idolatrous imitations of the Temple-service in every Indian pagoda. There are outer courts, and a Holy place, an altar of sacrifice, brazen bulls, &c. The Hindoos look upon both snakes and monkeys as sacred, but more like demons than gods; and do not you remember Adam Clarke's notion among the quaint fancies of the world, that Satan tempted Eve in the form of a monkey?

In your last you ask whether there is any truth in the account of the conversion of a whole tribe of Hindoos in Bengal. I believe there *is* truth in it. I asked Mr. T——, and he said he had heard nothing to throw discredit on the story, but I could not learn any more details or particulars than what you seem to have heard already. One grows sadly suspicious here of all such histories. My mind is, as you say yours is, rather "poisoned;" still I believe it *is* poison, and must not be allowed to work. I do not think the failures, or even the faults, of the present Missionary system any reason at all for lessening exertion—quite the contrary; the less that has been done, the more remains to be done: but what we want are workmen—*schoolmasters* especially. I do not see any use in making the collections you mention for the *converts*—better not, unless it is to pay Missionaries or schoolmasters for them.

* * * * * *

LETTER THE TWENTY-SEVENTH.

Bangalore, November 1st, 1839.

THIS place is not quite perfect as to climate, I see, pleasant as it is. I went a few days ago to call on some friends who live in a rather lower ground, in a very pretty English-looking house, with the compound sloping down towards a tank, to look like a villa on the banks of the Thames: very pretty, but rather deadly—"horribly beautiful!" They walked me round their charming damp garden, and into their sweet shady walks, which all smelt of ague, till my feet were as cold as stones, and I felt myself inhaling fever with every breath I drew. I hurried home as soon as I civilly could, but I had a sharp fit of fever in the night, and was prevented from getting my letter ready for the last steamer.

The Europeans here are chiefly military, and the ladies are different from any I have seen yet. The climate does not tempt them to the dawdling kind of idleness, so they ride about in habits made according to the uniform of their husbands' regiments, and do various spirited things of that sort. Then there is another set—good-natured, housekeeper-like bodies, who talk only of ayahs and amahs, and bad nights and babies, and the advantages of Hodgson's ale while they are nursing, and that sort of thing; seeming, in short, devoted to "suckling fools and chronicling small beer!" However, there are some of a very superior class—almost always the ladies of the colonels or principal officers in the European regiments. These seem never to become Indianized, and have the power of being exceedingly useful. Some of them keep up schools for the English soldiers' children, girls especially—superintend them, watch over the soldiers' wives, try to keep and encourage them in good ways, and are quite a blessing to their poor countrywomen.

We hear there has been a great deal of fighting at Kurnool.

Colonel D—— had the command of our troops, and has taken the country. The Rajah of Kurnool himself was an insignificant creature, but it turns out that he was in the pay of some higher power, supposed to be the Nizam's brother, who is trying to organize a conspiracy all over the country, but it is always discovered before it comes to anything. The Rajah of Kurnool, being unnoticed and out of the way, was chosen to collect and receive all the arms and ammunition; and when the English took his fort an enormous arsenal was found, and quantities of gunpowder kept in open chatties, under sheds made of dried leaves, and such queer contrivances, that it is a wonder the fort and the plot were not both blown up together long ago.

November 4th.—We have just heard news from Rajahmundry that has vexed us very much. Mr. X——, who was appointed as A——'s temporary substitute, has taken the opportunity to turn out, by hook and by crook, under one pretence or another, a number of the native Court servants, writers, &c., just in order to put in his own dependants from another district. It is a shameful proceeding, for the poor people who are thus disgraced and deprived of their livelihood have committed no fault at all, and are among the most respectable and clever servants of the Court.

November 5th.—More bad news from poor Rajahmundry. A short time ago a violent storm—such a storm as only occurs in the tropics—raged all along the coast from Narsapoor to Vizagapatam, and as far inland as Rajahmundry and Samulcottah. It must have been most awful. There was an irruption of the sea which drove all the shipping on shore, some of it four miles inland, and sloops are still fixed in gentlemen's gardens. It is computed that ten thousand people have been killed. All the little native huts at Samulcottah were blown down; all the European houses except two unroofed; our house at Rajahmundry all unroofed except one room; all X——'s furniture destroyed. We cannot be sufficiently thankful to the kind Providence which removed us before it took place, for with our two babies there is no saying what dreadful mischief might have happened. Neither we ourselves nor the children ever occupied the only room that remained safe, and the storm rose so suddenly in the night, that there would not have been time to

escape from one part of the house to the other. The destruction of property has been enormous: all the goods in the merchants' storehouses at Coringa and Ingeram ruined; the crops destroyed; the tanks filled with salt water—till the irruption of the sea subsided, no fresh water was to be procured all along the coast. It has been a most fearful visitation. I am very sorry indeed for the poor people, already so impoverished by two years' scarcity and constant heavy taxation. The Collectors are chiefly bent upon keeping up the revenue, whatever may happen; and the people suffer terribly when they have any additional drawback. A "crack Collector," as the phrase goes, is one who makes a point of keeping up the usual revenue in defiance of impossibilities. There may be a famine, a hurricane; half the cultivators may take refuge in another district in despair; there may seem no possible means of obtaining the money: but still the Collector bullies, tyrannizes, starves the people—does what he pleases, in short,—and contrives to send in the usual sum to the Board of Revenue, and is said to be a "crack Collector."

December 12*th*.—All the fighting at Kurnool is now over. Colonel D—— had the command of it. There were some European corps, dragoons and others, in the force. The fort which they went to besiege was given up to them directly, and they found it full of arms and gunpowder. But after they thought the whole affair was over, and that they had settled the matter without a shot, a party of Patans seized the Rajah, and our force was obliged to attack them. There was sharp fighting, and many killed; but it is all settled now. Colonel D——'s native regiment behaved so well, that, after the charge, the English dragoons went up and shook hands with them, and said they were as good soldiers as Englishmen, or "words to that effect." I saw the party of dragoons come home; poor things! they had lost the most men of any. Their band went out to meet them, with a large party of officers and civilians to welcome them home. The band had been practising the "Conquering Hero" for a week, and they all marched in in great state and looking very grand. Then there was a break in the procession, and the led horses of the men who had been killed followed; and after that the widows, with their palanquins and

bullock-carriages covered with black cloth. I think it was the most melancholy sight I ever saw, from the extreme contrast of all the music and gaiety preceding, and such a mournful change. A few days afterwards we saw Colonel D—— come in at the head of his Sepoys, very grand and proud, with all the colours and trophies they had taken. There seems no doubt but that there really *has* been a combination against us between all the Mohammedans in India; but, now they are put down, I suppose we are stronger than ever. It was remarkable that no Moormen came out to see the show of the regiments' return. In general they take such excessive delight in any military spectacle, that they will come from far and near to see it. This conspiracy seems like a last rise of the Mohammedan power: it is crumbling away everywhere. The English have now opened Affghanistan, and all that country will be under our orders. The Madras army is preparing for a Chinese war, and expecting to be ordered to China very soon.

Vellore, December 18th.—We are again on our road to Madras, and all our plans changed. This is the last letter you will receive from me, for I hope to be "over the surf" and on my way home to you all in another fortnight. We have been so strongly advised not to keep little Etta any longer in India, that we have at last made up our minds on the subject. A—— has applied for leave of absence, and will accompany her and me as far as the Cape, which he can do without losing his appointment; and I am then to proceed to England with her. Our passages are taken, and we expect to sail early next month.

THE END.

London: Printed by WILLIAM CLOWES and SONS, Stamford Street.

BOMBAY BRANCH
JACKSON
MEMORIAL
COLLECTION.
ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY

Mr. Murray's Monthly Library.

Published Monthly, in Parts, price 2s. 6d., or every alternate month, price 6s. in cloth,

THE HOME & COLONIAL LIBRARY.

Printed in good readable type, on superfine paper, and designed to furnish the HIGHEST LITERATURE of the day, consisting partly of ORIGINAL WORKS, and partly of NEW EDITIONS of POPULAR PUBLICATIONS,

At the lowest possible price.

This series of attractive and useful works, by approved authors, is called for in consequence of the Acts which have recently passed the British Parliament for the protection of Copyright, and the rights of British authors and publishers, by the rigid and entire exclusion both in GREAT BRITAIN and HER COLONIES, of foreign pirated editions; and the Works are issued at a rate which places them within the means not only of the Colonists, but also of the less wealthy classes at home, who will thus benefit by the widening of the market for our literature: and the "COLONIAL AND HOME LIBRARY" may be considered a "LIBRARY FOR THE EMPIRE."

The aim of the Publisher has been to produce a Series of Works as entertaining as romances, yet not frivolous, but abounding in sound information. The volumes are not merely low in price, they are of sterling merit, originality, and permanent interest.

Several Numbers of the "Home and Colonial Library" have already appeared, and have received the unanimous approbation of Critics and readers in all parts of the British dominions.

The recommendations of this series are:—

On the score of smallness of cost—Each number contains more than an ordinary Octavo volume, at one-fifth or sixth of the usual price.

On the score of novelty, interest, and merit—It includes works by Southey, Heber, Borrow, Irby and Mangles, Drinkwater, Barrow, Sir John Malcolm, Washington Irving, Darwin, Lady Duff Gordon, Lord Mahon, Gleig, Sir Francis Head, Richard Ford, &c.

In variety—It comprises Geography, Voyages and Travels, History, Biography, Natural History, Manners and Customs—thus rendering it equally acceptable to the Cottage and Boudoir; the utmost care being at all times exercised in the selection of works, so that they shall contain nothing offensive to morals or good taste.

The popularity of the subjects, and the moderation of the price of the "Colonial and Home Library" (*an annual outlay of only thirty shillings*), recommend it to the following classes of persons:—

To the Clergy—*as fitted for Parochial and Lending Libraries.*

Book Societies, Book Clubs, &c.—for the variety of its subjects.

Schoolmasters, Masters of Families, &c.—as prizes for the young, or Libraries of Factories, Workshops, and Servants' Halls.

Travellers—as portable and cheap volumes to read on the road, or for whiling away the monotony of a sea voyage.

Officers and all Economists in *space* or *pocket*, who, having limited chambers, and small book-shelves, desire a *concentrated Library*, at a moderate expenditure.

All who have Friends in Distant Countries—as an acceptable present to send out to them.

The Settler on the Plains of Australia, the Backwoods of America, or the Occupant of the remotest Cantonments of our Indian Dominions may here find the resources of recreation and instruction, at a moderate price, together with the perusal of many new books within a short period of their appearance in England.

The Student and Lover of Literature at Home, who has been content with the loan of a book, or has satisfied his curiosity by Magazines or Reviews, may now become possessed of the work itself, at a less cost than before.

*** *The following Works, forming Twenty Volumes, have already been published.*

Nos. 1—2.

Borrow's Bible in Spain.

"As a book of adventures, the most extraordinary one which has appeared in our own or any other language for a long time past."—*Quarterly Review.*

Nos. 3—6.

Bishop Heber's Journal in India.

"One of the most perfectly charming books we ever read."—*Examiner.*

No. 7.

Irby and Mangles' Travels.

"One of the most interesting and popular works of the present century."—*Aberdeen Journ.*

No. 8.

Drinkwater's Siege of Gibraltar.

"A book replete with interest and information."—*United Service Magazine.*

No. 9.

Hay's Morocco, and The Moors.

"A new and highly interesting work."—*Greenock Advertiser.*

No. 10.

Letters from the Shores of the Baltic.

"A series of charming descriptions; the style full of ease and freshness."—*Examiner.*

No. 11.

The Amber Witch.

"Nothing has so absorbed our interest. It is worthy of De Foe."—*Quarterly Review.*

No. 12.

Southey's Cromwell and Bunyan.

"Two of Mr. Southey's graphic and interesting biographies."—*Inverness Courier.*

No. 13.

New South Wales. By Mrs. Meredith.

"Combines piquancy of observation with practical information."—*Freeman's Journal.*

No. 14.

Barrow's Life of Sir Francis Drake.

"Mr. Barrow's interesting and instructive volume."—*Edinburgh Review.*

No. 15.

Memoirs of Father Ripa.

"As interesting a work as 'BORROW'S BIBLE IN SPAIN.'"—*Spectator.*

No. 16.

Lewis's West Indian Life and Manners.

"These highly amusing stories of actual Jamaica life."—*Quarterly Review.*

Nos. 17—18.

Sketches of Persia. By Sir John Malcolm.

"The Persians as a nation are here presented with all the interest of our amusing friend Hajji Baba."—*Quarterly Review.*

No. 19.

The French in Algiers, and Abd-el-Kader.

"A narrative of romantic and absorbing interest."—*Northern Whig.*

Nos. 20—21.

Bracebridge Hall. By Washington Irving.

"The most charming work ever written by Washington Irving."—*Cambridge Chronicle.*

Nos. 22—24.

Darwin's Naturalist's Voyage.

"The author is a first-rate landscape painter, and the dreariest solitudes are made to teem with interest."—*Quarterly Review.*

No. 25.

The Fall of the Jesuits.

"A work written in a candid and moderate tone."—*Cheltenham Journal.*

Nos. 26—27.

Life of the Great Condé. By Lord Mahon.

"A very interesting and skilful narrative."—*Quarterly Review.*

Nos. 28—29.

Borrow's Gypsies in Spain.

"These singularly attractive and various pages."—*Literary Gazette.*

Nos. 30—31.

The Marquesas. By Hermann Melville.

"A narrative of singular interest. A SECOND ROBINSON CRUSOE."—*John Bull.*

No. 32.

Livonian Tales. By a Lady.

"Long may the LADY OF THE BALTIC LETTERS continue to write Tales as good as these."—*Athenæum.*

No. 33.

Memoirs of a Church Missionary.

"Narrated so as to remind one of the 'VICAR OF WAKEFIELD.' "—*Morning Post.*

No. 34.

Sale's Brigade in Affghanistan.

"One of the noblest records of military adventures that we know."—*Morning Chronicle.*

No. 35.

Letters from Madras. By a Lady.

"A welcome addition to our store of literary entertainment."—*Britannia.*

Nos. 36—37.

Highland Sports. By Charles St. John.

"These interesting volumes. We would not desire a more pleasant companion."—*Morn. Post.*

No. 38.

Journeys across the Pampas. By Sir F. B. Head.

"A lively description of the vast countries visited."—*Edinburgh Advertizer.*

Nos. 39—40.

Gatherings from Spain. By Richard Ford.

"The best description of national character and manners of Spain that has ever appeared."—*Quarterly Review.*

TO BE FOLLOWED BY

THE TWO SIEGES OF VIENNA BY THE TURKS.
BY THE EARL OF ELLESMERE.

THE STORY OF THE BATTLE OF WATERLOO.
BY REV. G. R. GLEIG.

WAR OF LIBERATION IN GERMANY.
FROM THE GERMAN. BY SIR ALEXANDER GORDON, BART.

TALES OF A TRAVELLER. BY WASHINGTON IRVING.

HISTORY AND ANTIQUITIES.

I.

GIBBON'S ROMAN EMPIRE.

Edited, with Notes, by Rev. H. H. Milman. *Second Edition.* 6 vols. 8vo, 63*s.*

II.

THE POPES OF ROME:

Translated from the German of Leopold Ranke, by Sarah Austin. *Third Edition.* 2 vols. 8vo, 24*s.*

III.

A NEW HISTORY OF GREECE.

1. Legendary Greece. 2. Grecian History to the Reign of Peisistratus at Athens. By George Grote. 2 vols. 8vo, 32*s.*

IV.

EUROPE DURING THE MIDDLE AGES.

By Henry Hallam. *Eighth Edition.* 2 vols. 8vo, 24*s.*

V.

HISTORY OF ENGLAND,

From the Accession of Henry VII. to the Death of George the Second. By Henry Hallam. *Fifth Edition.* 2 vols. 8vo, 24*s.*

VI.

HISTORY OF ENGLAND,

From the Peace of Utrecht (1713), to the Peace of Paris (1763). By Lord Mahon. *Second Edition.* 4 vols. 8vo, 52*s.*

VII.

ENGLAND UNDER THE ANGLO-SAXON KINGS.

From the German of Lappenberg. By B. Thorpe, F.S.A. 2 vols. 8vo, 21*s.*

VIII.

HISTORY OF INDIA.

THE HINDOO AND MAHOMEDAN PERIODS.

By the Hon. Mountstuart Elphinstone. *Second Edition.* Map. 2 vols. 8vo, 30*s.*

IX.

THE ANCIENT EGYPTIANS;

THEIR PRIVATE LIFE, MANNERS, AND CUSTOMS.

By Sir Gardner Wilkinson. *Third and cheaper Edition.* With 600 Illustrations. 5 vols. 8vo, £4 4*s.*

X.

THE MARLBOROUGH DESPATCHES.

Edited by Sir George Murray. 5 vols. 8vo, with an Index, 20*s.* each.

XI.

SPAIN UNDER CHARLES THE SECOND.

Extracts from the Stanhope Correspondence, from 1690 to 1699. By Lord Mahon. *Second Edition.* Post 8vo, 6*s.* 6*d.*

BIOGRAPHY.

LIFE AND CORRESPONDENCE OF LORD SIDMOUTH.

By THE DEAN OF NORWICH. 3 vols. 8vo.

LIVES OF THE LORD CHANCELLORS OF ENGLAND.

By LORD CAMPBELL.

FIRST SERIES. To Revolution, 1688. *Second Edition.* 3 vols. 8vo, 42*s.*
SECOND SERIES. From Revolution, 1688, down to 1806. 2 vols. 8vo, 30*s.*

LIFE OF LORD CHANCELLOR ELDON.

By HORACE TWISS. *Third Edition.* Portrait. 2 vols. post 8vo, 21*s.*

LIFE OF SIR SAMUEL ROMILLY.

EDITED BY HIS SONS. *Third Edition.* Portrait. 2 vols. fcap 8vo, 12*s.*

LIFE OF GENERAL LORD HILL.

By Rev. EDWIN SIDNEY. *Second Edition.* Portrait. 8vo, 12*s.*

MEMOIR OF LORD SYDENHAM.

By G. POULETT SCROPE, M.P. *Second Edition.* Post 8vo, 9*s.* 6*d.*

NAVAL WORTHIES OF QUEEN ELIZABETH'S REIGN.

By JOHN BARROW. 8vo, 14*s.*

NAVAL LIFE OF SIR PHILIP DURHAM.

By his NEPHEW. 8vo, 5*s.* 6*d.*

BOSWELL'S LIFE OF JOHNSON.

By Right Hon. J. W. CROKER. *A New Edition revised, with great additions.* Royal 8vo.

LIFE AND LETTERS OF LORD BYRON.

By THOMAS MOORE. *New Edition.* Portraits. 8vo, 15*s.*

LIFE OF CRABBE, THE POET;

With his Letters and Journals. By his SON. Plates. Fcap 8vo, 7*s.* 6*d.*

LIFE OF ROBERT BURNS.

By J. G. LOCKHART. *Fifth and Cheaper Edition.* Portrait. Fcap 8vo, 3*s.*

LIFE OF SIR DAVID WILKIE;

With his Letters, Journals, and Critical Remarks on Works of Art.
By ALLAN CUNNINGHAM. Portrait. 3 vols. 8vo, 42*s.*

LIVES OF GALILEO, TYCHO BRAHE, AND KEPLER.

By SIR DAVID BREWSTER, LL.D. *Second Edition.* Fcap 8vo, 4*s.* 6*d.*

THEOLOGY.

THE ILLUMINATED COMMON PRAYER BOOK,

With 1000 Ornamental Initials, Borders, Vignettes, Titles, &c.
8vo. Cloth, morocco, or vellum.

THE BOOK OF THE CHURCH.

By Robert Southey, LL.D. *Fifth Edition.* With an Index. 8vo, 12*s.*

ILLUSTRATIONS OF THE LITURGY AND RITUAL.

Selected from Eminent Divines of the Seventeenth Century.
By Rev. James Brogden, M.A. 3 vols. post 8vo, 27*s.*

CATHOLIC SAFEGUARDS

Against the Errors, Corruptions, and Novelties of the Church of Rome.
Selected from Eminent Divines of the 17th Century.
By Rev. James Brogden, M.A. 2 vols. 8vo, 14*s.* each.

ON THE UNITY OF THE CHURCH.

By Henry Edward Manning, Archdeacon of Chichester. *2nd Edit.* 8vo, 10*s.* 6*d.*

PRAYERS FOR FAMILY USE FROM THE LITURGY.

By Right Hon. W. E. Gladstone. 12mo, 2*s.* 6*d.*

HISTORY OF CHRISTIANITY.

From the Birth of Christ to the Extinction of Paganism in the Roman Empire.
By Rev. H. H. Milman. 3 vols. 8vo, 36*s.*

DIALOGUES ON THE EVIDENCES OF CHRISTIANITY.

By William Sewell, B.D., of Exeter College, Oxford. Fcap 8vo, 7*s.* 6*d.*

SERMONS.

By Charles John Vaughan, D.D., Head Master of Harrow School.
8vo, 12*s.* 6*d.*

SUGGESTIONS TO THE THEOLOGICAL STUDENT

UNDER PRESENT DIFFICULTIES.
By A. C. Tait, D.C.L., Head Master of Rugby School. Post 8vo, 6*s.* 6*d.*

PARISH SERMONS;

On the Lessons, the Gospel, or the Epistle, for every Sunday and Principal Festival.
By Bishop Heber. *Fifth Edition.* 2 vols. post 8vo, 16*s.*

THE NESTORIAN CHRISTIANS, OR LOST TRIBES.

By Asahel Grant, M.D. *Third Edition.* Map. Fcap 8vo, 6*s.*

POETRY.

LORD BYRON'S POETICAL WORKS.
With Portrait and Plates. 10 vols. 18mo, *2s. 6d.* each.

LORD BYRON'S POETICAL WORKS.
With Portrait and View. One volume, royal 8vo, *15s.*

LORD BYRON'S TALES.
2 vols. 24mo, *5s.*

LORD BYRON'S DRAMAS.
2 vols. 24mo, *5s.*

LORD BYRON'S CHILDE HAROLD.
24mo, *2s. 6d.*

REV. GEORGE CRABBE'S LIFE AND POEMS.
A New Edition. With Portrait. One volume. Royal 8vo.

CRABBE'S POETICAL WORKS.
With a Life. By his SON. Plates. 8 vols. fcap 8vo, *40s.*

LOCKHART'S ANCIENT SPANISH BALLADS.
With Illuminated Titles, Coloured Borders, Vignettes, &c. 4to. *2l. 2s.*

WORKS OF HORACE.
With an Original Life. By the Rev. H. H. MILMAN. Illustrated with Views, Vignettes, Coloured Borders, &c. Crown 8vo.

CAMPBELL'S SPECIMENS OF THE POETS;
Revised by PETER CUNNINGHAM. Portrait. Royal 8vo, *15s.*

BISHOP HEBER'S POETICAL WORKS.
Third Edition. Portrait. Fcap 8vo, *7s. 6d.*

POEMS.
By Lord PATRICK ROBERTSON. Crown 8vo, *7s. 6d.*

REV. H. H. MILMAN'S POETICAL WORKS.
Second Edition. 3 vols. fcap 8vo, *18s.*

ALLAN CUNNINGHAM'S POEMS AND SONGS,
24mo.

REJECTED ADDRESSES.
Twenty-first Edition. Fcap 8vo, *6s. 6d.*

DIBDIN'S POPULAR SEA SONGS.
With Illustrations by GEORGE CRUIKSHANK. *Second Edition.* Fcap 8vo, *5s.*

POPULAR VOYAGES AND TRAVELS.

I.

A JOURNAL OF THE DISASTERS IN AFFGHANISTAN.

By Lady Sale. *Eighth Thousand.* With Plan. Post 8vo, 12*s*.

II.

THE SIKHS AND AFFGHANS

IMMEDIATELY BEFORE AND AFTER THE DEATH OF RUNJEET SINGH.

By Shahamat Ali, Persian Secretary to Sir Claude Wade. Post 8vo.

III.

JAPAN IN THE NINETEENTH CENTURY.

Described from the Accounts of Recent Dutch Travellers. Post 8vo, 9*s*. 6*d*.

IV.

A JOURNEY THROUGH ARABIA PETRÆA,

Mount Sinai, to the Excavated City of Petra, the Edom of the Prophecies.

By M. Leon de Laborde. *Second Edition.* Plates. 8vo, 18*s*.

V.

A SHORT VISIT TO THE IONIAN ISLANDS.

By Edward Giffard. With Views. Post 8vo, 12*s*.

VI.

THE SHORES OF THE MEDITERRANEAN.

WITH SKETCHES OF TRAVEL. 1843—45.

By Francis Schroeder. With Plates. 2 vols. post 8vo, 16*s*.

VII.

A VOYAGE OF DISCOVERY AND RESEARCH,

IN THE SOUTHERN AND ANTARCTIC SEAS.

By Sir James Clark Ross, Knt., R.N. Plates and Maps. 2 vols. 8vo.

VIII.

ETCHINGS OF A WHALING CRUISE.

With a Sojourn on the Island of Zanzibar. By J. Ross Browne.

With numerous Plates. 8vo.

IX.

ADVENTURE IN NEW ZEALAND.

With some Account of the Beginning of the British Colonization of the Island.

By E. J. Wakefield. 2 vols. 8vo, 28*s*.

X.

TRAVELS IN NEW ZEALAND.

With Contributions to the Geography, Botany, and Natural History of the Islands.

By Ernest Dieffenbach, M.D. With Plates. 2 vols. 8vo, 24*s*.

XI.

THE RUINED CITIES OF YUCATAN.

By J. L. Stephens. With 120 Engravings. 2 vols. 8vo, 42*s*.

XII.

ARCTIC VOYAGES OF DISCOVERY AND RESEARCH.

By Sir John Barrow, Bart. Portrait and Map. 8vo, 15*s.*

XIII.

FOREST SCENES AND INCIDENTS IN CANADA.

By Sir George Head. *Second Edition.* Post 8vo, 10*s.*

XIV.

A BACKWOODSMAN'S ACCOUNT OF UPPER CANADA.

For the Use of Emigrants. *Third Edition.* Fcap 8vo, 1*s.* 6*d.*

XV.

TRAVELS OF A GEOLOGIST IN NORTH AMERICA.

By Charles Lyell, F.G.S. With Illustrations. 2 vols. post 8vo, 21*s.*

XVI.

LETTERS FROM CANADA AND THE UNITED STATES.

By John Robert Godley. 2 vols. post 8vo, 16*s.*

XVII.

EXCURSION THROUGH THE SLAVE STATES;

From Washington on the Potomac, to the Frontiers of Mexico.
By G. W. Featherstonhaugh. 2 vols. 8vo, 26*s.*

XVIII.

TEXAS AND THE GULF OF MEXICO.

By Mrs. Houston. 2 vols. post 8vo, 21*s.*

XIX.

EXCURSIONS IN NEWFOUNDLAND.

By J. B. Jukes. With a Map. 2 vols. post 8vo, 21*s.*

XX.

GATHERINGS FROM SPAIN.

By Richard Ford. Post 8vo. 5*s.*

XXI.

DOMESTIC MANNERS OF THE RUSSIANS.

Described from a Year's Residence in that Country, chiefly in the Interior.
By Rev. R. L. Venables. Post 8vo, 9*s.* 6*d.*

XXII.

LETTERS FROM THE BYE-WAYS OF ITALY.

By Mrs. Stisted. Plates. 8vo, 18*s.*

XXIII.

TOUR IN AUSTRIAN LOMBARDY, TYROL AND BAVARIA.

By John Barrow. Woodcuts. Post 8vo, 10*s.* 6*d.*

XXIV.

BUBBLES FROM THE BRUNNEN OF NASSAU.

By Sir Francis B. Head, Bart. *Sixth Edition.* 16mo, 5*s.*

XXV.

ENGLAND, SCOTLAND, AND IRELAND,

The Channel Islands and the Isle of Man.
By Sir George Head. *Third Edition.* 2 vols. post 8vo, 12*s.*

GENERAL LITERATURE.

I.

THE SANATIVE INFLUENCE OF CLIMATE.

With an Account of the best Places of Resort for Invalids.
By Sir James Clark, Bart., M.D. *Fourth Edition*, Revised. Post 8vo, 10*s*. 6*d*.

II.

LITERARY HISTORY OF EUROPE.

By Henry Hallam. *Second Edition*. 3 vols. 8vo, 30*s*.

III.

THE PHILOSOPHY OF THE MORAL FEELINGS.

By John Abercrombie, M.D. *Seventh Edition*. Fcap 8vo, 4*s*.

IV.

ON THE INTELLECTUAL POWERS.

By John Abercrombie, M.D. *Eleventh Edition*. Fcap 8vo, 6*s*. 6*d*.

V.

PROGRESSION BY ANTAGONISM:

A THEORY.
Involving the Present Position, Duties, and Destiny of Great Britain.
By Lord Lindsay. 8vo, 6*s*.

VI.

REMARKABLE CRIMES AND TRIALS.

Translated from the German of Feuerbach. By Lady Duff Gordon. 8vo, 12*s*.

VII.

FAVOURITE HAUNTS AND RURAL STUDIES;

Including Visits to Remarkable Places in the Vicinity of Windsor and Eton.
By Edward Jesse. Woodcuts. Post 8vo.

VIII.

THE EMIGRANT.

By Sir Francis B. Head, Bart. *Third Edition*. Post 8vo. 12*s*.

IX.

THE ARABIAN NIGHTS.

With Explanatory Notes. Translated by E. W. Lane, and arranged for Family Reading. *Second Edition*. With 600 Woodcuts. 3 vols. post 8vo.

X.

HAWKSTONE:

A Tale of and for England, in 184—. *Third Edition*. 2 vols. fcap 8vo, 12*s*.

XI.

THE PROGRESS OF THE NATION

IN ITS SOCIAL AND ECONOMICAL RELATIONS.
By G. R. Porter, F.R.S. *Second Edition*. 8vo.

XII.

POLITICAL WORKS OF DAVID RICARDO.

With a Biographical Sketch of the Author. By J. R. M'Culloch. 8vo, 16*s*.

ILLUSTRATED WORKS AND ART.

I.

THE ILLUMINATED COMMON PRAYER BOOK,

With Initials, Borders, Vignettes, Titles, &c., gold and colours. Royal 8vo.

"The most splendid illuminated book ever published."—Times.

II.

LOCKHART'S ANCIENT SPANISH BALLADS.

With Coloured Borders, Woodcuts, Vignettes, Titlepages, &c. 4to, 42*s.*

"So beautiful a volume was never offered to the world."—Edinburgh Review.

III.

LORD BYRON'S CHILDE HAROLD.

With a Portrait and 60 Vignette Engravings. 8vo, 21*s.*

"A splendid work—worth illustrating, and worthily illustrated."—Athenæum.

IV.

PUSS IN BOOTS.

With 12 Illustrations. By Otto Speckter. Square 16mo.

"Complete pictures, and tell the story with dramatic force."—Spectator.

V.

THE CHARMED ROE;

With 12 Illustrations. By Otto Speckter. Square 16mo.

"Otto Speckter the best German animal painter."—Examiner.

VI.

THE FAIRY RING.

Tales and Stories for Christmas. With Illustrations by Richard Doyle.
Fcap 8vo, 7*s.* 6*d.*

VII.

HISTORY OF PAINTING—THE ITALIAN, GERMAN, FLEMISH, AND DUTCH SCHOOLS.

Translated from the German of Kugler. With Notes. 2 vols. post 8vo, 24*s.*

VIII.

THE ANATOMY AND PHILOSOPHY OF EXPRESSION,

As connected with the Fine Arts. By Sir Charles Bell.
Fourth Edition. With Plates. Impl. 8vo, 21*s.*

SCIENCE AND NATURAL HISTORY.

I.

THE CONNEXION OF THE PHYSICAL SCIENCES.

By Mary Somerville. *Seventh Edition.* Fcap 8vo, 10*s.* 6*d.*

II.

FARADAY'S CHEMICAL MANIPULATION;

Being Instructions to Students in Chemistry. *Third Edition.* 8vo, 18*s.*

III.

THE MUCK MANUAL;

A Practical Treatise on the Nature and Value of Manures. By F. Falkner. *A New Edition*, with a Glossary of Terms. Fcap 8vo, 5*s*.

IV.

ELEMENTS OF GEOLOGY.

By Charles Lyell, F.G.S. *Second Edition*. With 400 Woodcuts, &c. 2 vols. 12mo, 18*s*.

V.

PRINCIPLES OF GEOLOGY.

By Charles Lyell, F.G.S. *Seventh Edition, revised*. With 450 Woodcuts. One Vol. 8vo.

VI.

THOUGHTS ON ANIMALCULES;

Or, a Glimpse at the Invisible World, Revealed by the Microscope. By Gideon A. Mantell, LL.D., F.R.S. Plates. Crown 8vo, 10*s*. 6*d*.

VII.

GLEANINGS IN NATURAL HISTORY.

By Edward Jesse. *Fifth Edition*. With Woodcuts. Fcap 8vo, 6*s*. 6*d*.

VIII.

JOURNAL OF A NATURALIST.

Fourth Edition, with Woodcuts. Post 8vo, 9*s*. 6*d*.

IX.

THE NATURAL SYSTEM OF PLANTS.

With their Classification. By Mrs. Loudon. With 150 Woodcuts. Fcap 8vo, 8*s*.

SPORTING.

I.

THE CHASE—THE TURF—AND THE ROAD.

By Nimrod. *Second Edition*, with Plates by Alken and Gilbert. Post 8vo, 9*s*. 6*d*.

II.

THE FIELD SPORTS OF FRANCE;

By Rodk. O'Connor, Barrister at Law. Fcap 8vo, 7*s*. 6*d*.

III.

DAYS OF DEER-STALKING;

By William Scrope, F.L.S. *Third Edition*. Plates and Woodcuts. Crown 8vo.

IV.

DAYS AND NIGHTS OF SALMON FISHING.

By William Scrope, F.L.S. With numerous Plates. Royal 8vo, 2*l*. 2*s*.

V.

MAXIMS AND HINTS ON ANGLING AND CHESS.

By Richard Penn, F.R.S. *Second Edition*. With 24 Plates. Fcap 8vo, 5*s*.

VI.

THE MOOR AND THE LOCH;

By John Colquhoun. *Second Edition*. Plates. 8vo, 9*s*. 6*d*.

DOMESTIC AND RURAL ECONOMY.

I.

MRS. RUNDELL'S DOMESTIC COOKERY.

Founded upon Principles of Economy and practical Knowledge.

70th Edition, improved by the addition of 900 NEW RECEIPTS. Fcap 8vo, *6s.*

"The most PRACTICALLY USEFUL BOOK we have ever seen."—*British Critic.*
"The standard work of reference in EVERY FAMILY."—*Worcestershire Guardian.*
"LEAVES NO ROOM TO ANY RIVAL."—*Bath Journal.*

II.

NEW FAMILY RECEIPT-BOOK;

A Collection of a Thousand valuable Receipts in Domestic Economy.

New Edition. Fcap 8vo, *5s. 6d.*

"A larger quantity of truly valuable matter than any book of the same kind ever contained."—*British Critic.*

III.

GARDENING FOR LADIES;

With PRACTICAL INSTRUCTIONS and DIRECTIONS for EVERY MONTH.

By Mrs. LOUDON. *Sixth Edition.* Woodcuts. Fcap 8vo, *6s.*

"This charming little book ought to find its way into every cottage in the country."—*Atlas.*
"Thoroughly practical, and distinguished by great good sense."—*Gloucester Chronicle.*

IV.

FARMING FOR LADIES;

A GUIDE FOR THE POULTRY-YARD, DAIRY, AND PIGGERY.

By the Author of "BRITISH HUSBANDRY." Woodcuts. Fcap 8vo, *8s.*

"Abounding with most valuable hints in every branch of domestic economy."—*Reading Mercury.*
"This substantial guide is appropriately preceded by two illustrations of HER MAJESTY'S POULTRY-YARD."—*Newcastle Journal.*

V.

HAND-BOOK OF NEEDLEWORK;

A Guide to every kind of Decorative Needlework, Crochet, Knitting, and Netting.

By Miss LAMBERT. *Fifth Edition.* 150 Woodcuts. Fcap 8vo, *6s. 6d.*

"The most complete treatise on the art of needlework ever compiled."—*Atlas.*
"An eminently practical work; clear in its explanations and precise in its directions."—*Polytechnic Review.*

VI.

MY CROCHET SAMPLER.

By Miss LAMBERT. Woodcuts. 16mo, *2s. 6d.*

VII.

MY KNITTING-BOOK.

By Miss LAMBERT. First and Second Series. 16mo, *1s. 6d.* each.

WORKS OF AMUSEMENT & INSTRUCTION,

ADAPTED FOR YOUNG PERSONS.

I.

MRS. MARKHAM'S HISTORY OF ENGLAND.
Twelfth Edition, with Woodcuts. 12mo, 7*s.* 6*d.*

II.

MRS. MARKHAM'S HISTORY OF FRANCE.
Seventh Edition, with Woodcuts. 12mo, 7*s.* 6*d.*

III.

MRS. MARKHAM'S HISTORY OF GERMANY.
On the plan of Mrs. Markham's France and England.
With Woodcuts. 12mo, 7*s.* 6*d.*

IV.

MRS. MARKHAM'S SERMONS FOR CHILDREN.
Second Edition. Fcap 8vo, 3*s.*

V.

BERTHA'S JOURNAL
DURING A VISIT TO HER UNCLE IN ENGLAND.
Fifth Edition. 12mo, 7*s.* 6*d.*

VI.

PHILOSOPHY IN SPORT MADE SCIENCE IN EARNEST.
Sixth Edition. With 100 Woodcuts. Fcap 8vo, 8*s.*

VII.

STORIES FOR CHILDREN;
Selected from the History of England.
Fourteenth Edition. Illustrated with 24 Woodcuts. Square 16mo.

VIII.

PROGRESSIVE GEOGRAPHY FOR CHILDREN.
By the Author of "Stories for Children."
Fourth Edition. 18mo.

IX.

LITTLE ARTHUR'S HISTORY OF ENGLAND.
By the late Lady Callcott.
Seventh Edition. With Woodcuts. 18mo, 3*s.*

X.

THE YEAR BOOK OF NATURAL HISTORY.
By Mrs. Loudon. With 40 Woodcuts. 18mo, 4*s.*

XI.

ELEMENTS OF GEOMETRY AND ALGEBRA.
By Rev. George Fisher, of the Royal Naval Schools, Greenwich.
18mo, 3*s.* each. (*Published by Order of the Admiralty.*)

CLASSICAL & SCHOOL BOOKS.

I.

SMITH'S SCHOOL DICTIONARY OF ANTIQUITIES.

Abridged from the DICTIONARY of GREEK and ROMAN ANTIQUITIES. With 200 Woodcuts. Square 12mo, 10*s.* 6*d.*

II.

BUTTMAN'S LEXILOGUS;

Or, the Meaning and Etymology of Various Words and Passages in Greek Writers. Translated, with Notes, by FISHLAKE. *Third Edition.* 8vo, 14*s.*

III.

BUTTMAN'S IRREGULAR GREEK VERBS;

With all the Tenses that are extant—their Formation, Meaning, and Usage. Translated, with Notes, by FISHLAKE. *Second Edition.* 8vo, 7*s.* 6*d.*

IV.

CARMICHAEL'S GREEK VERBS:

Their Formations, Irregularities, and Defects. *Second Edition.* 12mo, 8*s.* 6*d.*

V.

COLERIDGE'S GREEK CLASSIC POETS.

Third Edition. Fcap 8vo, 5*s.* 6*d.*

VI.

THE ANCIENT GREEKS.

TRANSLATED from the GERMAN of HENRY HASE. Fcap 8vo, 5*s.* 6*d.*

VII.

MATTHIÆ'S SHORTER GREEK GRAMMAR.

Abridged by the BISHOP OF LONDON. *Seventh Edition. Revised* by EDWARDS. 12mo, 3*s.*

VIII.

GRÆCÆ GRAMMATICÆ RUDIMENTA MINORA.

A New Edition. 12mo, 2*s.*

IX.

GRÆCÆ GRAMMATICÆ RUDIMENTA: PARS POSTERIOR, SIVE SYNTAXIS.

A New Edition. 12mo, 2*s.*

X.

KING EDWARD THE SIXTH'S LATIN GRAMMAR.

A New Edition revised. 12mo, 3*s.* 6*d.*

XI.

ENGLISH NOTES FOR LATIN ELEGIACS.

By the Rev. W. OXENHAM, M.A., Second Master of Harrow School. 12mo, 4*s.*

BRADBURY AND EVANS, PRINTERS, WHITEFRIARS.

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 26 March, 2016